

Ministry of Higher Education and Scientific Research

University of Kerbala

College of Education for Human Sciences

Department of English



**Argumentative Indicators in Conflictive American
and Canadian Police-Suspect Interrogations: A
Pragma-Dialectical Perspective**

**A Thesis Submitted to the Council of the College of Education for
Human Sciences, University of Kerbala in Partial Fulfillment of
the Requirements for the Degree of Master of Arts in English
Language and Linguistics**

by:

Yousir Sabah Edin

Supervised by:

Prof. Muayyad Omran Chiad (Ph. D)

2022 A.D.

1444 A.H.

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

"وَجَادِلْهُمْ بِلَّتِي هِيَ أَحْسَنُ"

(النحل / 125)

*In the name of Allah, the Most Compassionate, the
Most Merciful*

*"Argue with them in the most courteous
way"*

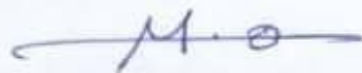
(AL-Nahl / 125)

(Abdel Haleem, 2004, p.174)

Supervisor's Declaration

I hereby certify that the thesis entitled **Argumentative Indicators in Conflictive American and Canadian Police-Suspect Interrogations: A Pragma-Dialectical Perspective** written by **Yousir Sabah Ddin** has been prepared under my supervision at the University of Kerbala in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of Master in English Language and Linguistics

Signature:



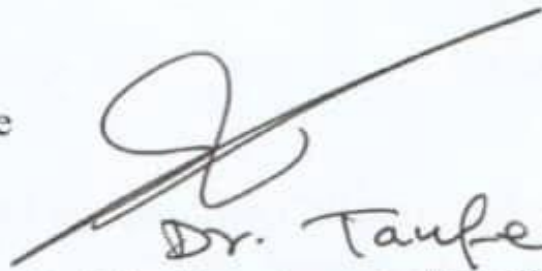
Supervisor: Prof. **Muayyad Omran Chiad (Ph. D.)**

Date: 26 / 10 / 2022

In view of the available recommendations, I forward this thesis for debate by the Examining Committee.

Signature

Name:



Dr. Tafieeqa Mujced

Head of the Department of English, College of


Education for Human Sciences,

University of Kerbala

Date: 26 / 10 / 2022

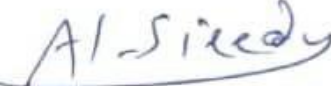
Examining Committee's Certificate

We hereby certify that we have read the thesis entitled **Argumentative Indicators in Conflictive American and Canadian Police-Suspect Interrogations: A Pragma-Dialectical Perspective** written by **Yousir Sabah Edin** and, as Examining Committee, examined the student in its contents, and that, in our opinion; it is adequate as a thesis for the degree of Master in English Language and Linguistics.

Signature 

Name: Prof.Dr. Abdulkarim Fadhil Jameel
Member

Date 25/10/2022

Signature 

Name: Dr. Ganim Jwaid Idan
Member

Date 12/10/2022

~~Signature~~

~~Name: Prof.Dr. Haider Bairmani~~

~~Member~~

~~Date 26/10/2022~~


~~Signature~~

~~Name: Prof.Dr. Muayyad Omran Chiad~~

~~Member~~

~~Date 24/10/2022~~

Approved by the Council of the College of Education for Human Sciences

Signature: 

Name: Hassan Habeeb AL-Kureiti

Dean of the College of
Education for Human Sciences

Date 26/10/2022

Dedication

To the one who inspired me, believed in me and supported me in all situations all the time:

To my soul mate, and my family.

Acknowledgments

Praise be to Almighty Allah, Lord of the Worlds, for His grace that is not counted and His prayers and peace be upon our Prophet Mohammed and his infallible progeny.

I would like to express my heartfelt gratitude to my supervisor, Muayyad Omran Chiad (Ph.D), for his devoted guidance and support during the research process. This project would not have been completed on time if it had not received his constant support, recommendations, intelligent comments, and serious concerns. I am grateful to have him as my supervisor.

I would also like to express my heartfelt gratitude to all of my instructors, the teaching staff of the department of English/ Kerbala University, who patiently taught me everything I know today and helped me through my B.A. and M.A. courses. I am also grateful to Asst. Lect. Wasan Hadi, Asst. Lect. Karrar Muhammad and Asst. Lect. Muhammad Abbas for their scientific support.

Abstract

The present study investigates the role of argumentative moves and indicators in four American and Canadian police interrogations. Argumentative moves and indicators have been examined in political debates, political speeches, courtroom discourse, and other sorts of discourse. However, investigating argumentative indicators in American and Canadian police interrogations have not been conducted, particularly from a pragma-dialectical perspective. Thus, the present study attempts to bridge this gap by highlighting the argumentative indicators and their uses in the data under scrutiny.

The study mainly aims at identifying argumentative moves and indicators and their functions in the data under scrutiny, differences between the various argumentative indicators utilized by American and Canadian police officers and suspects are also explored.

The main hypotheses of the study are: 1) each stage of argumentation has a specific set of indicators that are utilized by the participants of the interrogation, for instance, request for clarification and dispute indicators mark the confrontation stage, 2) and there is no statistically significant difference between American and Canadian police officers and suspects in utilizing the argumentative indicators of the confrontation, opening, argumentation, and concluding stages.

To achieve the aims and verify these hypotheses, the study adopts the model of "critical discussion" by van Eemeren, et al. (2007). Qualitative and quantitative approaches are used in analysis of the data.

The main conclusions of the study are: 1) not all types of the argumentative indicators found in police interrogations. Police interrogation requires a specific set of indicators, such as: Request for justification, request for clarification, strong assertive, weak assertive, semi-assertive and doubt indicators are found in the confrontation stage. The opening stage is marked by a challenge to defend standpoint, acceptance of the challenge as well as agreement and disagreement with the other arguer's proposition. 2) The use of the argumentative indicators in the confrontation, the opening, and the argumentation stage differs between American and Canadian police, but their use is similar in the concluding stage. American and Canadian suspects differ in using the argumentative indicators in the confrontation stage, and they are

similar in applying the argumentative indicators of the opening, argumentation, and concluding stage. The study ends with some recommendations and suggestions for further research.

Table of Contents

Dedication	iv
Acknowledgments	vi
Abstract	vii
Table of Contents	ix
List of Tables	xiii
List of Figures	xvii
List of Abbreviations	xix

CHAPTER ONE

INTRODUCTION

1.0 Introductory Note	1
1.1 Research Background	1
1.2 Research Problem	2
1.3 Aims	3
1.4 Hypotheses	4
1.5 Procedures	5
1.6 Limits	5
1.7 Significance	6

CHAPTER TWO

LITERATURE REVIEW

2.0 Introductory Note	7
2.1 Historical Overview	7
2.1.1 Definitions of Argumentation	8
2.1.2 Argumentation vs. Argument	10
2.1.3 Explicit and Implicit Differences of Opinion	11
2.1.4 Positive and Negative Standpoints	12
2.2 The Pragma-Dialectical Theory	14
2.2.1 Rules for Critical Discussion	18

2.2.2 The Meta-Theoretical Principles -----	20
2.2.3 Argumentative Indicators -----	24
2.3 The Dialectical Stages of Argumentations -----	24
2.4 The Structure of Argumentation -----	26
2.4.1 Types of Arguments -----	26
2.4.2 Evaluating Argumentative Discourse-----	27
2.5 Police Interrogations -----	28
2.5.1 Definitions and Stages -----	28
2.5.2 Suspects' Rights in the United States -----	30
2.5.3 Suspects' Rights in Canada-----	31
2.5.4 American vs. Canadian Law in Police Interrogations -----	32
2.6 Previous Studies -----	33
2.6.1 Previous Studies on Argumentative Indicators -----	34
2.6.2. Previous Studies on Police Interrogations-----	35
2.6.3 The Current Study-----	38
CHAPTER THREE -----	40
METHODOLOGY -----	40
3.0 Introductory Note -----	40
3.1 Research Design -----	40
3.2 Data Collection and Selection -----	41
3.2.1 Procedures-----	41
3.2.2 Criteria-----	41
3.3 Components of the Model-----	42
3.3.1 Pragmatic Characterization of Argumentative Moves-----	43
3.3.2 The Distribution of Speech Acts -----	44
3.3.3 The Dialectical Profiles of the Argumentative Move-----	46
3.3.3.1 Indicators of the Confrontation Stage-----	46
3.3.3.2 Indicators of the Opening Stage -----	50
3.3.3.3 Indicators of the Argumentation Stage-----	51

3.3.3.4 Indicators of the Concluding Stage----- 52

CHAPTER FOUR

DATA ANALYSIS AND DISCUSSION

4.0 Introductory Note ----- 55

4.1 Analytical Procedures ----- 55

4.2 The Qualitative Analysis ----- 56

4.2.1 The American Sample ----- 56

The American sample contains two cases.----- 56

4.2.1.1 Analysis of Case 1 ----- 56

4.2.1.2 Analysis of Case 2----- 70

4.2.2 The Canadian Sample----- 80

This section displays the Canadian samples cases. ----- 80

4.2.2.1 Analysis of Case 3 ----- 80

4.2.2.2 The Analysis of Case 4----- 91

4.3 The Quantitative Analysis ----- 98

4.3.1 The American Sample ----- 99

This section introduces the quantitative analyses of the American cases.-- 99

4.3.1.1 Argumentative Indicators in Case 1 ----- 99

4.3.1.1.1 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Police----- 99

4.3.1.1.2 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Suspect ----- 102

4.3.1.2 Argumentative Indicators in Case 2 ----- 105

4.3.1.2.1 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Police----- 105

4.3.1.2.2 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Suspect ----- 107

4.3.2 The Canadian Sample----- 110

4.3.2.1 Argumentative Indicators in Case 3 ----- 110

4.3.2.1.1 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Police----- 110

4.3.2.1.2 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Suspect ----- 112

4.3.2.2 Argumentative Indicators in Case 4 ----- 115

4.3.2.2.1 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Police----- 115

4.3.2.2.2 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Suspect -----	117
4.4 The Overall Analysis of the Data -----	118
4.4.1 The Argumentative Indicators Used by the American Police -----	118
4.4.2 The Argumentative Indicators Used by the American Suspects -----	122
4.4.2 The Argumentative Indicators Used by the Canadian Police -----	126
4.4.4 The Argumentative Indicators Used by the Canadian Suspects -----	130
4.5 Comparison Between American and Canadian Interrogations -----	135
4.5.1 American vs. Canadian Police -----	135
4.5.2 American vs. Canadian Suspects -----	140

CHAPTER FIVE

CONCLUSIONS, RECOMANDATIONS, AND SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER STUDIES

5.0 Introductory Note -----	144
5.1 Conclusions -----	144
5.2 Recommendation -----	148
5.3 Suggestions for Further Research -----	148
REFERENCES -----	149
APPENDECES -----	I
Appendix A: George Huguely Police Interrogation -----	i
Appendix B: Bryan Greenwell Police Interrogation -----	xviii
Appendix C: Russell Williams Police Interrogation -----	xxviii
Appendix D: Michael Rafferty Police Interrogation -----	lii

List of Tables

Table No.	Title	Page No.
1	Description of Data	42
2	Functions of Speech Acts as Moves	44
3	Distribution of Speech Acts	44
4	Classification of Confrontation Stage Indicators (Group1)	46
5	Classification of Confrontation Stage Indicators (Group2)	47
6	Dispute Indicators	48
7	Indicators of the Opening Stage	50
8	Indicators of Concluding Stage	52
Case 1		
9	Moves and Indicators of Confrontation Stage	59
10	Moves and Indicators of Confrontation Stage	61
11	Moves and Indicators of Opening Stage	63
12	Moves and Indicators of Opening Stage	65
13	Moves and Indicators of Argumentation Stage	67
14	Moves and Indicators of Concluding Stage	69
Case 2		
15	Moves and Indicators of Confrontation Stage	73
16	Moves and Indicators of Opening Stage	75
17	Move and Indicators of Argumentation Stage	78
18	Moves and Indicators of Concluding Stage	80
Case 3		
19	Moves and Indicators of Confrontation Stage	84
20	Moves and Indicators of Opening Stage	87
21	Moves and Indicators of Argumentation Stage	89
22	Moves and the Indicators of Concluding Stage	91
Case 4		
23	Moves and Indicators of Confrontation Stage	93
24	Moves and Indicators of Opening Stage	95
25	Moves and the Indicators of Argumentation Stage	97

26	Moves and the Indicators of the Concluding Stage	98
Case 1		
27	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	100
28	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage	100
29	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	101
30	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage	102
31	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators of Confrontation Stage	102
32	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage	103
33	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	104
34	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage	104
Case 2		
35	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	105
36	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage	105
37	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	106
38	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage	107
39	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	107
40	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage	108
41	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators of Argumentation Stage	109
42	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage	109
Case 3		

43	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	110
44	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage	111
45	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	111
46	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage	112
47	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	112
48	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in the Opening Stage	113
49	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	114
50	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage	114
Case 4		
51	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	115
52	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage	116
53	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	116
54	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage	117
55	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	117
56	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators of Argumentation Stage	118
Overall Analysis, American Sample		
57	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	118
58	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage	120
59	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	121

60	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage	122
61	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	123
62	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage	124
63	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	125
64	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in the Concluding Stage	125
Overall Analysis, Canadian Sample		
65	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	126
66	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage	127
67	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	128
68	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage	129
69	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	130
70	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage	132
71	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	133
72	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in the Concluding Stage	134
73	Chi-square for the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	135
74	Chi-square for the Indicators in Opening Stage	136
75	Chi-square for the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	138
76	Chi-square for the Indicators in Concluding Stage	139
77	Chi-square for the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	140
78	Chi-square for the Indicators in Opening Stage	141
79	Chi-square for the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	142
80	Chi-square for the Indicators in Concluding Stage	143

List of Figures

Figure No.	Title	Page No.
1	The Model of Analysis	54
The American Sample		
2	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	119
3	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage	120
4	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	121
5	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage	122
6	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	123
7	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage	124
8	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	125
9	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in the Concluding Stage	126
The Canadian Sample		
10	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	127
11	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage	128

12	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	129
13	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage	130
14	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	131
15	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening	132
16	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	133
17	Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage	134
18	Chi-square for the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	135
19	Chi-square for the Indicators in Opening Stage	137
20	Chi-square for the Indicators in Argumentation Stage	138
21	Chi-square for the Indicators in Concluding Stage	139
22	Chi-square for the Indicators in Confrontation Stage	140
23	Chi-square for the Indicators in Opening Stage	141
24	Chi-square for the Indicators in Argument Stage	142
25	Chi-square for the Indicators in Concluding Stage	143

List of Abbreviations

Abbreviated Form	Full-Form
Etc.	Et cetera
Fr.	Frequency
i.e.	This is
OPP	Ontario provincial police
Pr.	Percentage
UFO's	Unidentified flying objects
Vs.	Verses

CHAPTER ONE

INTRODUCTION

1.0 Introductory Note

This introductory chapter highlights the problem of the study by presenting several research questions to be answered. Moreover, it presents the aims, hypotheses, procedures, limits, and significance of the study.

1.1 Research Background

The study of argumentative discourse is an investigation into a particularly challenging sort of communication. Since Greek antiquity, the study of argumentation has been explored from various perspectives such as philosophical, normative, theoretical, and rhetorical, over the years (Drid, 2016).

Argumentation is a linguistic act with a complex structure used to explain a situation or justify an action. The Aristotelian syllogism is the cornerstone of argumentation, in which the truth of the conclusion is inextricably linked to the language form and the arguments used "premise". The "rhetorical argument" of ordinary language is far more complex than the "analytic conclusions" that are the subjects of formal logic. The persuasive power of "rhetorical arguments" is determined by their language structure as well as the veracity of their statements. Arguments can take the shape of dialogues, be embedded in scientific discourse, or appear in various forms of commercial advertising (Bussmann, 2006).

Argumentative discourse is a type of communication that can be decoded from a critical standpoint. "By clearly distinguishing between philosophical, theoretical, analytical, empirical, and practical research, this vision can be applied in the study of argumentation. Argumentative discourse aims at

resolving the difference of opinion in accordance with the critical norms of reasonableness" (van Eemeren & Grootendorst, 2004, p.53).

Houtlosser (2002) states that the study of argumentation pragmatically requires certain argumentative moves, which are represented by speech acts, and argumentative indicators. The argumentative indicators are the words and phrases that are used to progress the topic and the way it is structured and organized.

These argumentative indicators provide critical information for detecting arguments since they are useful cues for leading the argument to a particular conclusion (van Eemeren et al., 2007, p.33).

Discussing argumentation strikes the researcher's attention to think of police interrogation as a type of persuasive discourse. A police interrogation may sometimes involve or appear to involve persuasion of the suspects to make a confession (Walton, 2003). Interrogation is distinct from a normal conversation in that it entails both gathering "accurate, relevant, and comprehensive information from suspects on the one hand, and conveying information to keep them informed about what is happening and what will happen next on the other" (Schollum, 2005, p.10).

Hence, the research pertinent to the argumentative indicators in police-suspect interrogation is worthy of attention. The research attempts to investigate the argumentative indicators in police-suspect interrogation in two data types: American and Canadian.

1.2 Research Problem

The argumentative indicators employed by police officers and suspects in police-suspect interrogations are the subject of this study. The research focuses on the study of argumentative indicators and their significance in tracing argumentation processes. The current study deals with argumentative moves

and indicators through the analysis of police-suspect interrogations, which are the means through which the arguer might develop his/ her argumentation to obtain a given conclusion.

There are various pragma-dialectical studies that have been conducted by different researchers, such as Musi (2017), Ghadhab (2018), Al-Kabi (2019), and others, but the researchers have not studied police interrogations pragma-dialectically. The role of argumentative indicators in police-suspect interrogations has yet to be explored. This research aims to fill that gap by seeking to address the following questions:

- 1- What are the argumentative indicators of each stage of argumentation in the American and Canadian police interrogations?
- 2- What are the most and the least frequent argumentative indicators used by the American police officers and suspects in the stages of argumentation and what functions do they perform?
- 3- What are the most and the least frequent argumentative indicators exploited by the Canadian police officers and suspects in the stages of argumentation and what functions do they perform?
- 4- How do American and Canadian police officers and suspects differ in applying the argumentative indicators during interrogation?

1.3 Aims

In connection with the research questions, the present study aims at:

- 1- Identifying the argumentative indicators of each stage of argumentation in the American and Canadian police interrogations.
- 2- Specifying the most and the least frequent argumentative indicators used by the American police officers and suspects to resolve the argumentation and highlighting their functions.

- 3- Investigating the most and the least frequent argumentative indicators used by the Canadian police officers and suspects to resolve the argumentation and highlighting their functions.
- 4- Figuring out if there are significant differences between the argumentative indicators utilized by both American and Canadian police officers and suspects.

1.4 Hypotheses

The study comprises the following hypotheses:

- 1- Each stage has a specific set of indicators utilized in police-suspect interrogations. For instances, request for clarification and dispute indicators mark the confrontation stage.
- 2- The most frequent argumentative indicator of the confrontation stage utilized by American police is request for clarification to elicit information; while the least frequent argumentative indicator is semi-assertive to express an opinion. The most frequent argumentative indicator used by the American suspects is strong assertive; while the least frequent is dispute indicator.
- 3- The most frequent argumentative indicator of the confrontation stage utilized by Canadian police is strong assertive to express a standpoint, while the least frequent argumentative indicator is request for justification. The most frequent argumentative indicator utilized by the Canadian suspects is weak assertive; while semi-assertive is least frequent argumentative indicator.
- 4- There is no statistically significant difference between American and Canadian police officers on the one hand and suspects on the other hand in utilizing the argumentative indicators of the confrontation, opening, argumentation, and concluding stages.

1.5 Procedures

To achieve the aims of the study, the researcher follows the following procedures:

1. Surveying the relevant literature on pragma-dialectical approach and the concept of argumentative indicators as tools to move the discussion that is done in police-suspect interrogations and some other related topics.
2. Adopting an appropriate model for the analysis of the police-suspect interrogations.
3. Selecting the data for the analysis.
4. Analyzing the extracted data qualitatively in terms of the adopted model.
5. Conducting a statistical analysis via the statistical program for Social Sciences (SPSS) to address the aims and to support the findings of the study.
6. Discussing the results, drawing conclusions based on the findings of the analysis, and giving some recommendations and suggestions for further research.

1.6 Limits

- 1- The research is limited to four police interrogations. Two are American and two are Canadian wherein all the involved suspects are murderers.
- 2- The selected data are available in the form of YouTube recordings.
- 3- The current study is also limited to the pragma-dialectical approach of argumentative indicators which are proportional attitude indicators, force modifying expressions, subordinative arguments, dispute indicators, etc. Some argumentative indicators have been chosen and incorporated to the model of "critical discussion" to increase the number of argumentative indicators in each of the four stages. This

model is used in data analysis since the data involves two parties, each of whom attempts to persuade the other of their viewpoint (van Eemeren, 2007).

1.7 Significance

The current study is of importance for those who are interested in linguistics practically, in pragma-dialectics because this approach is applied in new type of data. The academic advantage entails a good explanation of argumentative indicators in selected police interrogations from a pragma-dialectical perspective, which is valuable to researchers interested in discourse analysis, pragmatics, and forensic linguistics. It is envisaged that such a study improves their understanding of how argumentative indicators are used in giving and asking for information. In addition, because institutional discourse differs from natural discourse in ordinary language, it is important to gain a better understanding of that type of discourse. Furthermore, the study broadens researchers' understanding of topics such as the stages of argumentation, argumentative moves, and the distribution of argumentative indicators in the stages of argumentation.

CHAPTER TWO

LITERATURE REVIEW

2.0 Introductory Note

This chapter is divided into six sections. The first section covers the literature review of argumentation, its prominent definitions, explicit and implicit differences of opinions, and positive as well as negative standpoints. The second section deals with the pragma-dialectical approach, its relevant definitions, its meta-theoretical principles, and rules for critical discussion. The third section sheds light on the nature of argumentative indicators as moves to push the argumentation forward. The fourth section briefly discusses the structure of argumentation, types of arguments and evaluating argumentative discourse. The fifth section discusses police interrogations, Miranda rights, the Canadian suspects' rights, and the difference between American and Canadian law in police interrogations. Finally, the sixth section discusses a number of previous studies in relation to the present study.

2.1 Historical Overview

People always have various perspectives on a wide range of issues in their lives. In fact, an individual may have diverse viewpoints with himself because he may alter his mind about topics from time to time. This phenomenon is a feature of human nature that can be found in his microcosms. People must, however, eliminate divergent points of view; otherwise, each will be intellectually isolated. Argumentation theory is at the heart of this process, attempting to bring about the construction, diversity, and elimination of viewpoints both individually and collectively in order to comprehend how perceptual difference is generated (van Eemeren & Grootendorst, 1983).

Argumentation theory is a large topic with a long history dating back to Aristotle and his logical theory, which has been shaped for over 2000 years. However, it is not limited to the philosophical fields because many scholars who tackle the term "argumentation theory" in their researches, writings, and books in various areas and fields have contributed to its development, and each one has its own contribution to it in accordance with its historical and contemporary traditions (Tindale, 1999)

Many American argumentation theorists have rejected and questioned Aristotle's idea over the years. They offer an intention to the interpersonal argument as they realize that argumentation theory needs to be developed as a mature science of interest on its own. Following then, many papers devoted to argumentation theory appear to significantly contribute to its progress. For instance, Pierce published the "Principle of Argumentation" in 1895 (Robert, 2015).

In the 1970s, van Eemeren and Grootendorst popularized argumentation theory as a way of settling disagreements in which two people try to reach an agreement through an argumentation process. According to van Eemeren et al. (2009), the scope of argumentation theory encompasses the study of argumentation in all of its manifestations and varieties. They add that since it is not limited to one field, it can be linked to linguistics, discourse analysis, sociology, education, science, and many others in addition to philosophy, rhetoric, and logic.

2.1.1 Definitions of Argumentation

Since the eighties, argumentation has been studied within the pragma-dialectical framework of Frans van Eemeren and Rob Grootendorst (1984, 1995, 2004). The study of argumentative discourse entails digging into a complex mode of communication.

The study of argumentation is handled from several perspectives over the centuries, dating back to Greek antiquity. Although there are clashing perspectives that come from the ancient sciences of logic, rhetoric, and dialectic, yet, there are also theoretical similarities and reciprocal influences amongst the many perspectives in the subject (Drid, 2016).

Argumentation, according to both Searle (1970) and Cohen (1973), is an illocutionary act, whereas convincing is a perlocutionary act. They also mention that arguing and persuasion have a unique relationship. Within the same vein, Eemeren and Grootendorst (1983) define argumentation as:

A speech act consisting of a constellation of statements designed to justify or refute an expressed opinion and calculated in a regimented discussion to convince a rational judge of a particular standpoint in respect of the acceptability or unacceptability of that expressed opinion. (p.18).

In principle, there should be a central viewpoint stated by the arguer in any argument. Other arguers present such a viewpoint for discussion. These standpoints are defended by numerous arguments. Finally, a conclusion is reached. This might be thought of as the most basic type of arguments (Eemeren et al., 2007)

By argumentation, the arguer tries to persuade the audience of the acceptability of a position on a proposition, whereas explanation aims to improve the listener's knowledge of the proposition represented by the explained statement. Another significant distinction is that argumentation is used when the speaker expects the listener to accept the speaker's point of view, whereas explanation is used when the speaker does not believe the explained statement has already been accepted by the listener as describing the true state of affairs (Henkemans,1998).

One more definition by Eemeren and Grootendorst, "argumentation is a verbal, social, and rational activity aiming at convincing a reasonable critic of the acceptability of a standpoint by putting forward a constellation of propositions justifying or refuting the proposition expressed in the standpoint" (van Eemeren & Grootendorst, 2004, p.1).

Wenzel (2006) mentions three dimensions of argumentation: rhetoric, logic, and dialectic. Rhetoric is concerned with how to persuade the other participant of one's point of view, logic sees argumentation as a product of the arguers' arguments, and dialectic sees argumentation as a process of interaction between two participants aimed at resolving differences of opinion.

In the *"Handbook of Argumentation Theory"*, argumentation is defined as a complex communicative and interactional act aiming at resolving a difference of opinion with the addressee by putting forward a constellation of propositions the arguer can be held accountable for in order to make the standpoint at issue acceptable to a rational judge who judges reasonably (van Eemeren et al., 2014).

As a result, the present study employs the concept of argumentation as a conversation or a critical discussion in which two participants have opposing viewpoints and the goal is to settle the difference of opinions.

2.1.2 Argumentation vs. Argument

Argumentation is derived from the Latin term "argumentatio", which has been investigated by various scholars, each of whom offers his or her own interpretation and definition of the term. Argumentation is a wide topic with a long philosophical heritage extends back to the fifth century B.C. It is developed by numerous hands and in many times before gaining its own academic character in the latter decades of the twentieth century (Hampe, 1985).

Tindale (1999) states that not only does philosophy play a role in the creation of argumentation, but rhetoric, dialectic, and logic all have a stake in the process of arguing.

Johnson (2000), proclaims that "argument is a component of the practice of argumentation" (p.31). According to Aristotle, arguments must be based on logic, proof, or appeal to reason. Still, emotional and aesthetic appeals may be used in arguments. Argument can also be found in other genres such as narration, description, and analysis. In reality, most writing incorporates some form of reasoning. Nowadays, a speaker with "right" on their side is more likely to lose an argument to a more compelling and persuasive speaker.

Argumentation in everyday language received little attention in the past. However, there was a strong interest in rhetoric around the turn of the nineteenth century, particularly in the United States. This enthusiasm was mostly driven by a desire to apply arguments in real-life situations (Eisa, 2008).

As a result, argumentation can be defined as the collection of several arguments, or what begins as argumentation must pass through a variety of arguments in order to achieve its conclusion.

2.1.3 Explicit and Implicit Differences of Opinion

When two parties do not completely agree on a point of view, they have a difference of opinion. It is not necessary for the second party to take an opposite stance. It is sufficient if the opposite party expresses doubt or uncertainty in response to one party's position, for example:

1) Paula: I think schools should spend more time teaching writing skills.

Jack: I don't know; I've never really thought about it.

An argument always involves two sides. One party asserts a position, while the other expresses reservations about it (van Eemeren et al., 2008).

In this sense argumentation is both a product and a process. Our attention is sometimes drawn to messages, which are the outcomes of debate. Both explicit and implicit messages are sent (Zarefsky, 2005).

The standpoint is sometimes rejected by the second party, and this rejection is shown explicitly, as in the example below:

2) *Paula: I think schools should spend more time teaching writing skills.*

Dan: That's ridiculous! More than enough time is spent on that already.

The difference of opinion is noticeable here, both the standpoint and the rejection of it are stated plainly. This is not always the case. Sometimes one party expresses their views and the difference of opinion often stays implicit, especially in written texts. The suspicion or uncertainty of the opposing side is anticipated. For example:

3) *Paula: Schools should spend more time teaching writing skills because students these days have a hard time putting their thoughts on paper. Furthermore, our schools spend ridiculously little time on these skills compared to other countries.*

Paula knows that her point of view will not be readily acknowledged by everyone, which is why she takes the trouble of providing arguments in support of it. It is also possible that she is misinformed and that there is no disagreement between her and her readers (van Eemeren et al., 2008).

2.1.4 Positive and Negative Standpoints

Any phrase that incorporates a certain position is considered a standpoint. "Standpoints only become so when they occur in a context which allow them fulfill a specific function in the communication process. Then, these utterances are, in a specific way, instrumental in achieving a certain goal" (Van Eemeren & Grootendorst, 2004, p.3).

An essence of a statement is always a proposition in which a particular trait or quality is given to people or things mentioned. There are two opposing viewpoints on the proposition included in a particular statement when there is a difference of opinion. A proposition is a statement that describes facts or happenings, for example:

- 4) *Last year ticket sales at movie theaters declined by 3%.*
 - 5) *Knowledge of foreign languages will be an increasingly important requirement in job applications,* a prediction.
 - 6) *Amsterdam is the most beautiful city in Europe,* a judgment.
 - 7) *You should brush your teeth with the softest possible toothbrush* or advice.
- (Van Eemeren et al., 2008, p.5).

The critical discussion model, which provides a method for determining whether the protagonist of a viewpoint can resist the objections or doubts of an antagonist, is a crucial aspect of the theory (Kienpointner, 1997).

A proposition can be viewed from a positive, negative, or neutral perspective. When it comes to the idea that unidentified flying objects, hence for UFOs, are a hoax, Dan, Paula, and Alice all have different perspectives, for example:

- 8) *Dan: I think UFOs are a hoax.*
- Paula: I don't think UFOs are a hoax.*
- Alice: I don't know whether UFOs are a hoax or not.*

In this case, Dan has made a firm commitment to the belief that UFOs are a hoax. In regards to the proposition, he has taken a positive perspective. Paula, who believes UFOs are not a hoax, has taken a negative stance on the matter; she has a different opinion taking a negative perspective. Alice has made no commitment to this proposition because she is undecided about it. She is maintaining a neutral perspective for the time being. There is always at least one individual who presents a positive or negative viewpoint on some topic, as well

as one person who has reservations or refuses to commit to any particular viewpoint, in a difference of opinion. It is possible that the second participant has both reservations and an alternative viewpoint, but this is a more complicated type of conflict (van Eemeren et al., 2008).

2.2 The Pragma-Dialectical Theory

Pragma-dialectics is an approach of argumentation developed by Frans van Eemeren and Rob Grootendorst at the University of Amsterdam's Speech Communication Department in the 1970s. It has become one of the most prominent multidisciplinary methods to persuasive discourse in the recent years (Van Eemeren & Grootendorst, 1984, as cited in Drid, 2016).

Pragma-dialectics is an interdisciplinary field that studies and improves argumentation skills. On the one hand, pragma-dialectics considers argumentation from the perspective of a speech act, giving it a pragmatic account; it is based on the Speech Act Theory in part. On the other hand, the normative focus of the approach comes from the procedural dialectical conceptualization of argument, as opposed to the logical or rhetorical ones (Wenzel, 1992, as cited in Drid, 2016).

In the 1970s, influenced by Karl Popper's critical rationalism, van Eemeren and Grootendorst have begun to examine argumentation as a technique of resolving disagreements. They want to create a rule of behavior for argumentative dialogue as a general goal. Theoretically, they look for a good mix of linguistic insights from language usage research and logical ideas from critical conversation research. They call this approach as argumentation pragma-dialectics because the former is known as "Oinguistic", i.e. "pragmatics" and the latter as "philosophical", i.e., "dialectics." Van Eemeren and Grootendorst use Austin and Searle's speech act theory, Grice's logic of

ordinary conversation, Lorenzen's dialogue logic, and Barth and Krabbe's formal dialectics to establish pragma-dialectics (Van Eemeren et al., 2007).

Even when the exchange of ideas takes the form of a monologue, the pragma-dialectical theory of argumentation implies that argumentative discourse is part of an exchange of views between two parties with a difference of opinion. The argumentative section of this monologue is then viewed as the part of a critical conversation in which the protagonist is given the opportunity to defend his position, while the antagonist's share of the critical discussion is left unspoken. Even if the antagonist position is not actively played, the protagonist's argument might be analyzed as a contribution to a critical conversation meant to address potential doubts or criticism (Van Eemeren et al., 2007).

Four stages are differentiated in the resolution process in pragma-dialectics, which are called the discussion stages of a critical discussion. The "confrontation stage", "opening stage", "argumentation stage", and "concluding stage". Although not all four stages must be explicitly completed in order to resolve a disagreement in a reasonable manner, it is impossible to resolve a disagreement in a fair manner unless each stage of the resolution process has been adequately addressed (Van Eemeren et al., 2008).

According to Bonevac (2003), pragma-dialectics is dynamic, context-sensitive, and multi-agent; it promises fallacious and argumentative structural theories. It is dynamic in the sense that it addresses the pragmatic component as well as the principles of rational debate. In choosing the context as the most essential component of the dialogue, it is context-sensitive. It is also multi-agent in the sense that two or more people must participate in a reasonable dialogue.

According to Van Eemeren (2015), "pragma" refers to the pragmatic part of the theory, while "dialectics" refers to the dialectical aspect of the theory that focuses on the rules of acceptable dialogue.

Gerber (2011) mentions that the rhetorical and dialectical viewpoints are discussed in pragma-dialectics. The former seeks to persuade the other participant of the rational discussion's point of view. The latter is concerned with the manner in which the argumentation should be managed, taking into account the rules of critical discussion.

The pragma-dialectical approach relies on the theoretical groundwork for resolving argumentation issues. These issues are discussed as part of a critical dialogue. The critical conversation is an exchange of viewpoints between two people with the goal of determining whether or not the viewpoints are acceptable. Such an assessment is made based on the opponent party's suspicions or agreement. The pragmatic-dialectic approach combines two schools of study: dialectics and pragmatics. Dialectics is a study that focuses on argument exchanges, while pragmatics is a study that focuses on the use of language in communication (Van Eemeren et al, 2007).

It is distinct from other approaches in that it focuses on how language is employed in any arguing conversation to achieve communicational and interactional goals. The type of linguistic contact between the arguers, proponent and opponent in the communication process are examined in the argumentation. At the same time, in any argumentation process, the reactions to the opponent's viewpoints are regarded as the most significant process in any discussion.

Henkemans (2014) states that:

The analysis of argumentation from a speech act perspective undertaken by Van Eemeren and Grootendorst and by Jacobs and Jackson in the 1980s has provided argumentation scholars with a basic framework for the application of

pragmatic insights to problems of analysis in argumentative discourse. (p.52).

Henkemans (2014) continues to emphasize the importance of the pragma–dialectical approach in analyzing argumentative discourse. He states that the construction of a model for critical debate in which the constitutive moves are characterized as speech acts has been possible by the use of pragmatic insights in the pragma–dialectical theory of argumentation: the fundamental elements of communication are speech acts.

Van Eemeren and Grootendorst present their method for reassembling any argumentative debate. This method takes into account all of the elements that go into a critical debate. It aims to study argumentative discourse in order to resolve disagreements between viewpoints in a reasonable manner. In their book "*A systematic Theory of Argumentation*" (2004, pp.35-36), it is read that "according to this approach, the quality of the production, analysis, and evaluation of argumentative discourse can be raised only by improving the quality of the communication and interaction between the participants".

Fahmi and Rustono (2018) propose that:

According to Eemeren (2004), there are three reasons why this approach is assumed as the most appropriate approach to describe argumentative indicators:

1. discussion of argumentation and texts are always used to solve different arguments,
2. giving specification to all speech acts having constructive roles in solving different opinion stages, and
3. clarifying various argumentative indicators in argument movements systematically in its relation to solving argument stage. (p.30).

In essence, resolving a difference of opinion is not the same as resolving a conflict. When a difference of opinion is resolved through, for example, a vote or by an outside entity with power over the parties in a disagreement, the conflict is ended. This does not necessarily imply that a disagreement has been resolved. An arguer demonstrates whether the point of view can be justified in light of the other party's critical replies (Van Eemeren et al., 2007).

Finally, the pragma-dialectical theory sheds light on the highly normative type of discourse that suits police interrogation. Interrogation is viewed as a type of discourse aimed at acquiring information in order to serve justice and eliminate harm.

2.2.1 Rules for Critical Discussion

In argumentation, communication, and fallacies, Eemeren and Grootendorst (2009), present the "Ten Commandments" of critical discussion:

Rule 1. Parties shall not inhibit one other from advancing or casting doubt on one another's positions.

Rule 2. If the opposite party asks for it, a party that expresses a viewpoint is obligated to defend it.

Rule 3. A party's attack on a viewpoint must be related to the viewpoint advanced by the opposing party.

Rule 4. A party can only defend a position by presenting arguments in support of that position.

Rule 5. A party may not repudiate a premise that the other party has left implicit or falsely offer anything as a premise that the other party has left unexpressed.

Rule 6. A party may not propose a false premise as an accepted starting point or refute a premise that represents an agreed starting point.

Rule 7. A party may not consider a position to be convincingly defended if the defense is not carried out using an acceptable and correctly implemented argumentation scheme.

Rule 8. A standpoint should be defended by an appropriate argument, otherwise it is not considered to be defended.

Rule 9. "A failed defense of a standpoint must result in the party that put forward the standpoint retracting it and a conclusive defense of the standpoint must result in the other party retracting its doubt about the standpoint."(p.284)

Rule 10. A party must not employ formulations that are insufficiently clear or confusingly ambiguous, and a party must read the formulations of the other party with care and accuracy (Van Eemeren et al., 2009).

Rule 1. is intended to ensure that opposing viewpoints and doubts about opposing viewpoints can be openly expressed. A difference of opinion cannot be resolved unless all parties involved understand that there is a difference and what that difference entails. Rule 2. is intended to protect sophisticated and suspicious viewpoints from critical criticism. A disagreement cannot be resolved if the party who offered a point of view is unwilling to take on the role of protagonist for that point of view (Van Eemeren et al., 2009).

According to Rules 3. and 4., a disagreement cannot be settled if the antagonist is criticizing a different point of view, or if the protagonist later supports a different point of view. If the antagonist or protagonist distorts the core issue, a proper resolution of a disagreement is impossible. Rule 5. assures that the protagonist's argumentation's implicit aspects are likewise scrutinized. A difference of opinion cannot be resolved if the protagonist attempts to escape his or her commitment to defend an unexpressed premise, or if the antagonist attempts to magnify the breadth of the unexpressed assumption (van Eemeren et al., 2008).

Rule 6. is intended to ensure that the starting points of a conversation are correctly employed in attacking and defending viewpoints, so that argumentation can lead to the settlement of a difference of opinion when the discussion's conduct demonstrates that this is a result of the participants' commitments. Rule7. ensures that an argumentation can lead to a resolution of a disagreement of opinion. The protagonist's reasoning scheme must then be carefully chosen and effectively applied. Rule 8. ensures that an argument can only lead to the resolution of a disagreement if the rationale beneath the protagonist's argumentation is legitimate (van Eemeren et al., 2009).

Rule 9 is intended to ensure that the protagonist and antagonist correctly determine the outcome of the discussion. The goal of Rule 10. is to avoid misconceptions caused by confusing, vague, or ambiguous phrasing (Van Eemeren et al., 2008).

2.2.2 The Meta-Theoretical Principles

There are four meta-theoretical principles of pragma-dialectics as follows:

1-The Externalization Principle

The externalization principle tries to resolve disagreements between arguers' points of view employing the rules for critical discussion (Van Eemeren & Grootendorst, 2004). According to Capone et al. (2013) and van Eemeren (2015), internalization is not the same as externalization. The former is concerned with the participants' interaction, whereas the latter is concerned with the arguers' psychological thoughts and logical reasoning.

In pragma-dialectics, externalization of commitments is achieved by concentrating attention on the unique obligations that a speaker or writer establishes in a given context through speech acts performed in an argumentation discussion or composition (Van Eemeren et al., 2007). Diversity in any argumentative debate necessitates opposing viewpoints on one or more

propositions. Externalization of the persuasion process is demonstrated in this situation by an explicit agreement to a given proposition, which is manifested when the opposing arguer accepts the positive viewpoint. "Consequently, 'convincing' can be externalized as the explicit acceptance of a positive commitment to a proposition, where the one accepting this positive commitment previously had an incompatible position" (Van Eemeren et al., 2007, p.3).

Similarly, the word "being convinced" might be defined as any person who is opposed to the speech act accepting the positive commitments to the speech act (Van Eemeren & Grootendorst, 2004).

2-The Functionalization Principle

The functionalization principle is concerned with the participants' speech acts at various stages of the critical dialogue. It emphasizes the significance of context in the debate (Van Eemeren & Grootendorst, 1992; & Eemeren, 2015). Different speaking acts are used to exemplify the functionalization principle, such as "adopting, questioning, rejecting, defending or attacking" a specific standpoint. According to this idea, individuals attempt to resolve disagreements between viewpoints by engaging in various forms of speech acts (Van Eemeren & Grootendorst, 2004, p.54).

The examination of speech acts leads to the determination of a case's disagreement space. It also reveals how the arguer reacts to the opposing party's objection in a specific speech act argumentation. "The analysis of the speech acts performed enables us to determine which argumentative move is made in a particular stage of the resolution process" (Van Eemeren, et al.,2007, p. 4).

Another significant idea raised by Renkema (2009, p.173) is that this principle "does not deal with one speech act. It views more than one speech acts and it is called complex speech acts which deal with one speech act having more than one function in each stage".

3-The Socialization Principle

The socialization concept is concerned with the various roles that the participants in the conversation play. One person expresses his or her point of view and defends it, while the other expresses his or her mistrust of the viewpoint (van Eemeren & Houtlosser, 1999).

According to Blair and Johnson (1987), the players take on the roles of questioner and answerer. By asking questions, the questioner challenges the answerer's point of view. By his responses to the questions, the respondent seeks to refute the viewpoint. The author assumes the position of proponent. The reader plays two roles: opponent and determiner. As Eemeren and Grootendorst (1984, p.15) point out that the opponent is called "a rational judge" who presents some serious issues and critical inquiries concerning the point of view.

In fact, each party has the ability to make specific comments throughout the debate. These obligations may be triggered during the contact process. New commitments may also be made in relation to the words said and the stage at which they are spoken. "Therefore, the context of interaction plays an important part in the analysis of contributions made to resolving a difference of opinion in an argumentative discussion or text" (van Eemeren et al., 2007, p.3).

In most cases, resolving a difference of opinion is accomplished by presenting a precise reason or refutation for the opinions expressed in the debate or discussion. This strategy will put an end to any questions about the validity of the opinions being debated. In pragma-dialectics, "argumentative discourse is understood as a purposive verbal activity that has a function in the regulation of disagreement and has a structure that is essentially determined by this function" (van Eemeren et al., 2007, p.4).

4-The Dialectification Principle

The dialectification principle is concerned with the conventions that organize and systematize the dialogue. These criteria describe a path to achieving sensitivity in order to resolve a disagreement (Wenzel, 1979).

Eemeren, et al. (2007, p.5) state that "dialectification of argumentative discourse is realized in pragma-dialectics by treating the moves that are made in an argumentative discussion or text as speech acts that must conform to the rules that are to be observed in a critical discussion aimed at resolving a difference of opinion".

The dialectification principle has two fundamental rules: problem validity and conventional, inter-subjective, validity. The problem validity refers to the resolution of differences of opinion while ignoring erroneous standards, whereas conventional validity refers to the acceptability of the parties of solutions in the discussion. The basic goal of the pragma-dialectic approach is to regulate any critical conversation owing to the acceptability or skepticism of viewpoints. In terms of conventional validity, it demonstrates that the arguers agree on these rules. It is important to note that these rules should be arranged in a logical manner. Furthermore, dealing with conventional validity before addressing problem validity for resolving the difference of viewpoints is impractical (van Eemeren & Grootendorst, 2004).

In any critical discussion, the concepts of externalization, socialization, functionalization, and dialectification should lead to general conclusions in the dialectical examination of argumentative indicators. The four principles of externalization, functionalization, socialization and dialectification constitute a sound basis in the light of which the arguers reach to a conclusion (van Eemeren 1984, as cited in Drid, 2016).

2.2.3 Argumentative Indicators

Argumentative indicators are specifically "words and expressions that refer to any of the moves that are significant to the argumentative process" (van Eemeren et al., 2007, p.33). These argumentative indicators provide critical information for detecting arguments, since they serve as effective cues to lead the argument to a particular conclusion (van Eemeren et al., 2007)

Argumentative indicators are the words and phrases that are used to guide the flow of a debate and how it is structured and organized (Houtlosser, 2002). According to Henkenmans (2003), the pertinent component items in the text, as well as the links between these things, are the argumentative indicators.

Eemeren et al. (2007) state that:

There are two senses of argumentative indicators: the limited and the wide senses. The limited sense of argumentation refers to the specific expressions that are used in the moves of the discussion. These expressions are, for instance, "in my opinion", "thus", and "because". On the other hand, the wide sense of argumentative indicators is related to any word or articulation which is utilized by the participants in the discussion. (pp.1-2).

Finally, the indicators can enlighten this research because the main aim of the study is to explore how police and suspects use these argumentative indicators to resolve their opposing positions. These indicators are explored in details in chapter three (*cf.* 3.3).

2.3 The Dialectical Stages of Argumentations

The process of resolving any difference of opinion has four stages. Any argument's arguers should go through these steps in order to arrive at a suitable solution to a disagreement. The confrontation, the opening, the arguments, and

the conclusion are the stages of discussion. Touria Drid (2016, p.27) writes that "four dialectical stages can be distinguished in the process of resolving a difference of opinion, which the participants in an argumentative exchange of views have to pass through. These stages comply with the phases of a critical discussion".

These four stages do not have to be clear in practice. As a result, they are in full and most appropriate order in some texts. However, it is preferable to address each stage properly in order to reconcile differences of opinion, whether they occur implicitly or explicitly in an argumentative conversation.

Husain and Noor (2017) mention that

"Van Eemeren, Grootendorst and Henkemans (2002) suggested four stages of argumentation. The first is *confrontation stage* where standpoints or claims are lodged. This is followed by an *opening stage* where discussions are initiated while the next stage is the *argumentation stage* where justifications are presented. The final stage is the *conclusion* where results of the discussion are established or reinforced" (p.90)

The process of resolving differences of opinion should go through four stages, each of which has a function to play in the resolution of that disagreement. As a result, the arguers' positions are presented during the confrontation stage. Roles and conversation points should be established during the opening stage. In the argumentation stage, the argument is presented, and criticism is also expressed (van Eemeren et al., 2007). Finally, the findings of a conversation are established in the concluding stage. These steps, of course, are not to be fulfilled in their entirety. Rather, it is critical to resolve differences of opinion in an acceptable and reasonable manner by adequately addressing each

stage of the resolution process. It is preferable to deal with each stage in a more deliberate manner for the benefit of clarity (van Eemeren et al., 2007).

The stages of critical discussion will be explained in details in chapter three (*cf.* 3.3).

2.4 The Structure of Argumentation

The structure of argumentation is discussed in the following subsections: Types of arguments and evaluating argumentative discourse.

2.4.1 Types of Arguments

The most basic kind of argumentation is a single argument; however, the structure of argumentation can be very complicated. For example, multiple-argumentation entails more than one different justification of the same position. More than one argument is frequently used to defend a position. To build a defense of a position, several single arguments can be joined and structured in a variety of ways. Only after it is clear how the arguments fit together can argumentation be evaluated (van Eemeren et al., 2008).

Argumentation is used when someone begin to defend a point of view that they believe is not shared by others. Not only is there a need for argumentation, but there are also conditions for argumentation, as well as the structure of argumentation, all of which are linked to a situation in which doubt, potential resistance, and possibly objections and counterclaims develop (van Eemeren et al., 2013).

Multiple arguments make up complex argumentation. Complex argumentation consists of a series of counter-arguments against the same point of view, given one after the other. These defenses do not rely on one another to defend the position, and they are, in theory, of equal weight. Each defense may theoretically stand on its own and is presented as if it were enough to support the point of view (van Eemeren et al., 2008).

An argument's structure can range from exceedingly simple to extremely complicated. Some texts have a very simple and brief argumentation structure, while others have a very complex argumentation structure (Drid, 2016).

The arguments in coordinative argumentation do not form a succession of alternate defenses of the same position. Coordinative argumentation is a single attempt to defend a position that consists of a collection of arguments that must be combined to provide a convincing defense. The component pieces of coordinative argumentation are dependent on one another for the defense of the viewpoint. They complete one another; sometimes because each individual argument is insufficient to definitively defend the viewpoint on its own (van Eemeren & Henkemans, 2017).

In "subordinative argumentation, the defense of the initial standpoint is made layer after layer". If the initial standpoint's supporting argument is insufficient, another argument is added, and if that argument is insufficient, a third argument is added, and so on, until the defense appears conclusive. Many layers of subordinative argumentation are possible (van Eemeren et al., 2008, p.64).

2.4.2 Evaluating Argumentative Discourse

Anyone wishing to critically analyze an argumentative debate or text must first do a thorough examination of the discourse to ensure that their judgment is founded on a correct grasp of the arguing process. As a result, an analyst of an argumentative debate or text requires reliable evidence to determine what argumentative advances are made in the discourse and what these moves entail (van Eemeren et al., 2007).

Argumentation should be judged on the basis of a thorough examination. For example, the unacceptability of one element of a multiple argumentation has quite different ramifications for the overall judgment than the unacceptability of

a component of a coordinative or subordinative reasoning. One weak link in the chain of arguments lowers the overall power of subordinative argumentation. The outcome of coordinative argumentation is that the entire defense is weakened. The rest of the defense, though, stands for multiple argumentation; therefore, there is a strong probability the defense will still be conclusive (van Eemeren et al., 2008).

A theoretical instrument for assessing, evaluating, and developing argumentative discourse is the "critical discussion" model. The audience is in charge of judging argumentation: if an argument is successful in persuading the intended audience, it is deemed acceptable or argumentatively legitimate (van Eemeren & Grootendorst, 2004).

To evaluate the soundness of an argument, it must be broken down into individual arguments, each of which must be evaluated. It is not recommended, however, to analyze individual arguments before establishing if the argumentation as a whole is consistent (van Eemeren et al., 2017).

There are two types of inconsistencies in argumentative discourse: logical and pragmatic. A logical inconsistency occurs when two claims contradict each other and cannot both be true. A pragmatic inconsistency occurs when an argument contains two claims that cannot be true at the same time or have otherwise contradictory real-world consequences (van Eemeren et al., 2017).

2.5 Police Interrogations

This section discusses police interrogations, Miranda Rights, the Canadian suspects' rights, and the difference between American and Canadian law in police interrogations.

2.5.1 Definitions and Stages

Royal and Schutt (1976, p.21) define police interrogating as "the art and mechanics of questioning for the purpose of exploring or resolving issues".

Interrogation is a theory-driven social interaction guided by an authority person who has a strong a priori belief in the target and assesses success by his or her ability to elicit a confession (Kassin, 2005).

According to Solan and Tiersma (2005), police interrogation refers to the words or acts used by the police to elicit a reaction from the suspect in order to learn the truth about a certain criminal case.

Law enforcement authorities frequently obtain confessions from criminal suspects in order to incriminate people accused of committed a crime. According to Kassin and Gudjonsson (2004), between 42 and 55 percent of suspects confess during interrogation. Confessions are often interpreted as substantial, and often unequivocal, proof of guilt by legal professionals and jurors (Kassin & Sukel, 1997).

For social scientists and legal experts, police interrogation is an essential and intrinsically fascinating topic. The current interrogation technique, the confessions it frequently produces, and the crimes it occasionally solves, and the clashing interests and ideologies it involves pose plenty of critical questions. The importance of police questioning and confession-taking to society is significant (Kassin & Sukel, 1997).

Police interrogation is, of course, frequently required in the investigation and resolution of crime, particularly felony crime. Because there may be no other evidence of guilt, some crimes, such as conspiracy and extortion, or even rape and child abuse, can often be solved only by a confession. Leo (2008) defines police interrogations as a "necessary and valuable police activity in a democratic society as it is conducted fairly and legally" (p.8).

Mason (2016) states that police interrogations frequently follow a four-stage process. The formative stage, which specifies how evidence can be collected, is the initial stage. The second stage is known as the preliminary stage, and it is during this stage that the questioner formulates the questions for

the suspects, for example, depending on what the person accusing the suspect has told the police. The third stage is referred to as the argumentation stage, and consists of the suspect-interrogator's questions and answers. This step consists of the actual questioning which includes the exchanges between the police and the suspects. The fourth stage is referred to as the closing stage. The police officers had finished gathering the information they were looking for at this point, as the term implies.

It is critical to establish the facts of the incident and the suspects' involvement during police interrogations. When attempting to do this, prefaced questions can make a significant difference. These prefaced inquiries aid in the development of the facts of the addressed topic (Johnson, 2002). These kinds of inquiries are also used to evaluate and summarize the suspect's past responses, allowing the next set of questions to focus on specific aspects that could be relevant. Moreover, these inquiries can test the suspect and lead him/her to reformulate a previous response, allowing the police officer to dig deeper into the case (Johnson 2002).

2.5.2 Suspects' Rights in the United States

Suspects' Right, or sometimes called "Miranda Rights" refers to the warnings that are recited to the suspects by the police as they are arrested and before any kind of questioning and interrogation. The Court's purpose in Miranda Rights is to provide sufficient protections. When a suspect in custody is interrogated by police, s/he must be "adequately and efficiently informed of his rights" and given "constant chance to exercise them." To that end, the police are to inform the suspect "in clear and unequivocal terms" that s/he has the right to remain silent, anything said "can and will" be used against him/her in court, s/he has the right to consult a counsel prior to questioning, and if s/he could not

afford an attorney, one would be appointed for him/her prior to any questioning if the defendant so desired (Medalie et al., 1968).

At least two premises seem to underpin the Court's decision:

1. The police provide adequate and effective warnings of legal rights and respect the accused's exercise of those rights.
2. The defendant will understand the meaning of the warnings and their significance in relation to himself, giving him enough information to decide whether or not to remain silent and whether or not to seek counsel in his own best interests (Miranda warning, 2019).

2.5.3 Suspects' Rights in Canada

The Canadian Constitution, which incorporates a constitutionally protected Charter of Rights and Freedoms, was declared by the Canadian government in April 1982. The Bill of Rights in the United States Constitution provides part of the Charter's content. The Charter, like the Bill of Rights, protects accused persons' rights against government interference. Unlike the Bill of Rights, however, the Charter expressly specifies that it applies to both federal and provincial governments (Harvie & Foster, 1996).

The rules of Charter concerning confessions and their exclusion from trial are rather straightforward. The police must inform a detained or arrested person of his right to retain and instruct counsel as soon as possible under Section 10(b) of the Charter. Section 7 guarantees that everyone has the right to life, liberty, and personal security, and that these cannot be taken away from them except in line with fundamental justice principles. If it is more likely than not that admitting the evidence will bring the administration of justice into disrepute, Section 24 (2) compels trial judges to remove evidence gathered by the police in a way that violated a Charter right from the trial (Foot, 2018).

2.5.4 American vs. Canadian Law in Police Interrogations

There is a considerable difference between the Canadian and the American law concerning police interrogations. The warnings in section 10 (b) of the Canadian law provide more protection than Miranda in a number of ways:

1. The warnings must be given upon detention,
2. There is a more stringent waiver requirement,
3. Non-testimonial as well as testimonial evidence from the accused is excluded,
4. the right to government appointed counsel is enhanced, and
5. counsel is provided before a search.

However, because police personnel in Canada are not obligated to inform detainees of their right to quiet, section 10(b) provides less protection than Miranda warnings. (Harvie & Foster, 1996, p.512).

Suspects in Canada must be told of their right to retain and instruct counsel as soon as possible, well ahead of their American counterparts, who must wait until they are in prison and interrogation is about to commence before being informed of their right to counsel (Harvie & Foster, 1996).

Unlike in Canada, policemen in the United States would not be required to inform the suspect of his right to counsel and his right to stay silent unless the suspect is in custody, as established by the court. "Suspects are not in custody for Miranda purposes until they are formally arrested or are in a circumstance that equates to the functional equivalent of formal arrest." Officers who undertake investigative stops in the United States are not obligated to read the Miranda warnings before questioning detainees (Harvie & Foster, 1996, p. 514).

Miranda Rights and warnings are extremely important in the United States. Miranda Rights primarily include: "The constitutional right of a person in custodial police interrogation to remain silent, enshrined in the Fifth Amendment privilege against self-incrimination" (Rogers et al., 2007, p. 178). As a result, before beginning with the real interrogation, police officers must

notify suspects of their rights and ensure that they understand them, and this refers to as Miranda warning (Miranda Warning, 2019). These Rights must be communicated in a clear and direct manner (Rogers et al., 2007). Miranda Rights do not exist in Canada's legal system, which instead includes other precautions such as the right to remain silent, the right to legal counsel, and so on (Eastwood & Snook, 2010).

In Canada, the concept of evidence originating from the accused includes line-up identification and blood samples, in addition to the classic self-incrimination conception of testimonial evidence. When the police fails to inform suspects of their section 10 (b) right, the Supreme Court of Canada dismisses line-up identification and blood samples from trial. The Fifth Amendment only protects the accused in the United States from being forced to supply the state with testimonial or communicative evidence. Suspects are not exempt from appearing in lineups or giving breath or blood samples because they have exercised their right to remain silent. As a result, the right to counsel is not available during a line-up before the defendant has been formally charged or indicted, or during breath testing (Harvie & Foster, 1996).

Despite these differences in the Canadian and American laws, the information regarding suspects' rights might differ between the United States and Canada, but there are methods applied in police interrogations around the world, such as the Reid method (Kozinski, 2018). The Reid approach offers "guidelines," as Mason (2016) refers to them, for officers wanting to obtain a confession from a suspect without resorting to physical force.

2.6 Previous Studies

This section chronologically lists some previous studies and compares them to the current study. Though all studies are related to the present study,

they are divided into two groups: the first deals with previous studies on argumentative indicators, while the second deals with police interrogation.

2.6.1 Previous Studies on Argumentative Indicators

1- Musi (2017)

The study is entitled as *Evidently Epistential Adverbs are Argumentative Indicators: A corpus-based study*. It aims to demonstrate that adverbs are effective argumentation markers. The study aims to demonstrate how professional annotators can use observation signals to derive analytical results.

The researcher chooses the text genre of newspaper articles to be the data of analysis.

The findings emphasize the presence of premise-conclusion relationships and their application to causal argument structures from effect to cause. The researcher discovers that the Italian adverb (*evidentemente*) is more commonly used, making it a more useful indication.

2- Ghadhab (2018)

This study is entitled "*A Pragma-Dialectical Study of Argumentative Indicators IN American Electoral Campaign Debates*". The study aims to look into (1) Trump's argumentative indicators and their functions in his electoral campaign debates, (2) Clinton's argumentative indicators and their functions in her debates, and (3) the similarities and differences between Trump and Clinton's use of argumentative indicators and their functions.

The data are taken from six presidential election campaign debates in the United States in 2016. Only one of the debates takes place in 2015, with the others taking place in 2016. The debates are gathered at random from six different websites. The information was gathered between 2017 and 2018.

Some of the findings of this study are: Trump and Clinton who make use of the function "a one-sided burden of proof agreement." In pragma-dialectics,

the goal of a critical conversation is to come to a consensus on how to resolve the disagreement. Trump and Clinton agree with the other nominees' positions in the early stages of the election debates because they have nothing to say or the other nominees' beliefs are correct. They both employ the "a denial of a one-sided burden of proof" function. In their electoral debates, Trump and Clinton interrupt the other candidates, insist on their points of view, and refuse to give the other candidates the opportunity to speak their thoughts.

3- Al-Kabi (2019)

The study is entitled *Argumentative Indicators in some of Chomsky's political discourse: A pragma Dialectical Study*. This study aims to demonstrate how the Pragma dialectical technique can help illuminate political arguments and reveal the arguer's point of view while writing them.

The data for this study are Chomsky's seven writings on the American invasion of Iraq and its consequences for Iraq and the Middle East are also examined in depth.

The study concludes that Chomsky's remarkable effectiveness in authoring these argumentative articles derives from his clever use of argumentative indicators in conjunction with diverse communication acts. Chomsky's careful argumentation in authoring these essays is aided by his effective use of argumentative indicators and communication, acts assertive and usage declarative. As a result, writing such well-structured argumentations reveals his ability to thoughtfully examine political topics, establishing him as a clear-sighted political analyst.

2.6.2. Previous Studies on Police Interrogations

1- Sadiq (2011)

The study is entitled *A Discourse Analysis of the Language of Interrogation in Police/Criminal Investigations in the Kano Metropolis*. It

investigates the language used by Kano police officers during interrogation. The goal of this study is to explain the structure of the police/accused conversation and to monitor the participants' communication tactics during the interrogation. Grice's (1975) cooperative principles, Sinclair and Coulthard's (1975) discourse model, and Bruton's (1981) work form the basis of the analysis framework.

The data are gathered during interrogations of various individuals at three police stations: Sabon Gari (Nomansland), Fagge Police Station, and Nassarawa Police Station. In total, six investigations have been reported, two from each police station. Theft and fighting have been reported in Nomansland; homicide and deception have been reported in Fagge; and fraud and cheating have been reported in Nassarawa.

The findings show that: (1) question/answer sequences are prototypical patterns of discourse acts in police interrogations; (2) questioning forms are frequently used in police/accused interrogation to control the flow of discourse; (3) the asymmetric relationship between the investigator and the suspect is one significant factor that makes the police staff successful in their criminal investigation; (4) the investigator has the right to ask questions.

2-Al-Sahlane (2015)

This study is entitled *A Linguistic Analysis of Presuppositions in Police Interrogations*. The overall goal of this inquiry is to discover the common use of presuppositions and how police officers use them to achieve the interrogation tactics on which they rely. The inquiry also looks into the pragmatic and structural methods of identifying and realizing such general types of presuppositions in police interrogations.

The data in this study are made up of thirty extracts from police interrogations that are chosen at random.

One of the findings of this study is that during questioning, police personnel routinely put their interviewees in interpretive situations. In this study,

this method is referred to as competence minimization. When police officers use assumption as part of this technique, they frequently build a complex and strong set of expressive behaviors that pose interpretation issues for the audience.

3. Barus et al. (2017)

Speech Acts in Police Investigative Interviews is the title of this research. The research looks into the speech acts of police interviews. Its goal is to figure out and describe how the police and the suspects use different forms of speech acts. The relevant data come from two police interviews that worked on Michael Brown's case. This research employs Searle's Speech Acts theory.

The findings reveal that (1) in the first police interview, five different sorts of speech acts are used, including representational, Commissive, declarative, directive, and expressive. Declarative speech acts are still not employed in the second police interview, (2) representative speech acts are the most common sort of speech act among the two police interviews, and (3) directive speech acts are the most common speech act created by police to find facts and information. (4) The most common speech act employed by the suspects is representational speech act, which is used to inform, describe, explain, affirm, or deny.

4-Kadhim (2021)

The study is entitled as *A Sociopragmatic Study of Power in Selected American Police Interviews*. The aim of the research is to identify power-exercising and power-resisting strategies, the impact of power on interactions, the most and least exploited power strategies by both police interviewers and suspects, the differences between the various power strategies, and the devices that manifest each power strategy.

The data are obtained from "Police Interrogation Transcripts," which publishes videos of police interviews along with their scripts. The three police interviews were conducted between May 2010 and August 2017.

The study concludes that: (1) all power strategies are utilized in the data, except that *no comment* strategy has been found absent in George Huguely's police interview, (2) power plays a significant role in the selection of these strategies and the degree of focus on one strategy more than others, (3) *topic control* has recorded the highest rank whereas *maximization* has achieved the lowest in terms of police power strategies, in contrast, *denial* is the most dominant strategy whereas *no comment* is the least used in regards to suspect power strategies, (4) there are no statistically significant differences between power strategies in impact, which suggests that all power strategies are effectively used, and (5) five devices are reciprocally utilized by both police interviewers and suspects to manifest their strategies including *questions*, *politeness*, *formulation*, *topic management*, and *hedges*.

2.6.3 The Current Study

After discussing the aforementioned previous studies, it is necessary to pinpoint the differences between the current study and the previously mentioned ones.

First, there has been much scholarly research on police interrogations. However, few attempts are made to study police/suspect discourse pragma-dialectically. All the above mentioned studies have tackled the concept of argumentative indicators either in political discourse or in newspaper articles, while the present study investigates the concept of argumentative indicators with a different discourse, i.e., police interrogations. This kind of discourse is chosen because it involves two parties arguing for different standpoints, as argumentative discourse, according to the pragma-dialectical theory of argumentation, is part of a discussion between two parties that have opposing viewpoints. Furthermore, police detectives have a certain opinion about the case they are investigating, but suspects have quite different standpoints.

Second, the model of critical discussion is used in the data analysis. In addition, to enhance the number of argumentative indicators in each of the four stages, some argumentative indicators are picked and added to the model. This model is employed in data analysis because the data comprises two parties, each of whom strives to persuade the other of their point of view. It attempts to resolve disagreements amongst arguers in a rational discussion by assessing whether or not the point of view is acceptable.

Third, the data under analysis are four police interrogations, the first two are American and the others are Canadian: George Huguely (2010), Bryan Greenwell (2016), Russell Williams (2010) and Michael Rafferty (2009).

To conclude, none of the previous studies has shed light on the comparison between American and Canadian police interrogations pragmatically, which is the focus of the present study.

CHAPTER THREE

METHODOLOGY

3.0 Introductory Note

The research methodology used in this study is described in this chapter. The research design, data collection and selection, sample size and saturation, and the model's components are then identified and explained.

3.1 Research Design

The current study adopts a mixed approach that encompasses both qualitative and quantitative methods. Creswell (2009) defines qualitative research as delving into and comprehending the significance that individuals or groups attach to a social or human issue. The research process entails developing questions and processes, gathering data in the participants' environment, inductively analyzing the data, expanding from specifics to broad themes, and producing interpretations of the data's significance.

On the other hand, Bryman (2012), defines the quantitative method as a research technique that places a premium on quantification in data collecting and analysis. Quantitative research entails calculating things. It entails gathering information so that it may be measured and statistically treated in order to support or invalidate alternative knowledge claims (Williams, 2007).

As a result of this combination, both approaches complement and reinforce each other, resulting in a richer and more comprehensive study. Such a mixed-method approach can help the researcher dig deeper into the data, which is thought to improve the validity of the study and detect the problem from a more holistic perspective (Creswell, 2014).

The qualitative aspect of this study examines the idea of argumentative indicators in conflictive American and Canadian police interrogations using a

pragma-dialectical approach. The quantitative aspect includes using the Statistical Program for Social Sciences (SPSS) as a statistical tool to enrich the findings of the study, support the researcher's interpretation, and eliminate bias or subjectivity.

3.2 Data Collection and Selection

This section discusses the procedures of the study and the criteria by which the data is selected.

3.2.1 Procedures

The current study uses an internet-based data collection method. Initially, the researcher looked for data and discovered roughly 50 police interrogation scripts. She later reduced these interrogations to four video-recorded police interrogations based on the criteria outlined below. Two American police interrogation cases and two Canadian police interrogation cases are chosen for the purpose of analysis. All of the interrogations that have been picked are based on murder case. The police interrogations were held between October 2009 and June 2018. The four police interrogations took place in a small private interrogation room within an official police building, where the police officer and the suspect were discussing a recent murder crime in which the suspect was charged.

3.2.2 Criteria

The data in this study are intentionally chosen following the outlined criteria:

1. As the current study is presented in English, American and Canadian police interrogations are thought to be able to meet the researcher's need to complete her task because the interrogations are conducted in English and the subjects are native English speakers.

2. It concentrates solely on real video-recorded police interrogations that have been documented as part of normal police process and then uploaded to YouTube. In the analysis, however, the study is reliant on their scripts.
3. To eliminate gender differences interfering with the interpretation of the results, all of the interrogations done with male suspects.
4. The data contains information about suspects who would subsequently be found guilty.
5. All texts focus on suspects accused of murder rather than other crimes like robbery or fraud, in order to avoid the impact of crime type on the severity of suspects' resistance. They are all murderers in the current cases.
6. All the suspects are murderers, mass murderers, or serial killers. The act of murdering a large number of people, usually at the same time or over a short period of time and in close proximity, is known as mass murder (Duwe, 2007). The description of data is shown in Table 1.

Table 1
The Description of Data

Case No.	Appendix	Suspect's Name	Date	Cases	Detectives
1	A	<i>George Huguely</i>	<i>May 3, 2010</i>	<i>American</i>	<i>Lisa Best</i>
2	B	<i>Bryan Greenwell</i>	<i>May 13, 2016</i>	<i>American</i>	<i>Royce</i>
3	C	<i>Russell Williams</i>	<i>February 7, 2010</i>	<i>Canadian</i>	<i>Jim Smyth</i>
4	D	<i>Michael Rafferty</i>	<i>April 8, 2009</i>	<i>Canadian</i>	<i>Jim Smyth</i>

3.3 Components of the Model

In argumentative discourse, critical discussion is an ideal model of pragma-dialectics. This model is applied to the data analysis. It seeks to resolve

disagreements between arguers in a rational discussion by determining if the point of view is acceptable or not (Van Eemeren & Henkenmans, 2007).

According to Tindale (2004), the model of critical discussion integrates the dialectical and rhetorical components and combines a reasonable manner to affect the audience.

Van Eemeren (2012) states that conversation among the participants is based on critical exchanges achieved by the speaker's questions and the listener's responses. The critical discussion links the logical viewpoint or dialectical perspective, and the various exchanges or pragmatic perspective in the argumentative discussion.

Palmieri (2014) mentions that the critical discussion model aids analysts in reconstructing and evaluating the argumentative exchanges within the conversation. This approach does not deal with describing communication in any noticeable way.

The dialectical processes that must be recognized in resolving a disagreement of opinion, and the linguistic moves that serve a constructive function in the various stages of the resolution process are specified in this model. The starting point is that a difference of opinion is only addressed when all the people concerned agree on whether or not the disputed viewpoint is acceptable (Van Eemeren et al., 2007). There are two aspects to the ideal model of critical discussion: pragmatic and dialectical.

3.3.1 Pragmatic Characterization of Argumentative Moves

The pragmatic characterization of argumentative moves as speech acts is elaborated by Eemeren et al. (2007) wherein the distribution of speech acts in a critical discussion is shown in the table below:

Table 2*The Functions of Speech Acts as Moves*

Assertives	1-Expressing a standpoint. 2-Advancing an argumentation. 3-Maintaining or retracting a standpoint. 4-Establishing a result.
Commissives	1-Acceptance of a standpoint or not, repeating that the standpoint is not accepted. 2-Acceptance of a challenge to defend a standpoint. 3-Decision to discuss; agreement on discussion rules. 4-Acceptance of an argumentation or not.
Directives	1-Challenge to defend a standpoint. 2-Requesting an argumentation. 3- Requesting a usage declarative.
Usage Declaratives	1-Provide a definition, a specification, amplification, etc.

3.3.2 The Distribution of Speech Acts

Van Eemeren et al. (2007) explicate the distribution of speech acts among the stages of the critical discussion as shown in Table 3.

Table 3*The Distribution of Speech Acts*

Confrontation	
Assertive	Expressing a standpoint.
Commissive	Acceptance a standpoint or not.
Directive declarative	Requesting a usage declarative.
Usage declarative	Definition, specification, amplification.

Opening	
Directive Commissive Directive Usage declarative	Challenge to defend the standpoint Acceptance of the challenge to defend the standpoint agreement on premises, and the discussion rules Requesting a usage declarative Definition, specification, amplification, etc.
Argumentation	
Directive Assertive Commissive Directive Usage declarative	Requesting argumentation. Advancing argumentation. Accepting argumentation or not. Requesting a usage declarative. Definition, specification, amplification, etc.
Concluding	
Commissive Assertive Directive Usage declarative	Acceptance of the standpoint or not. Repeating that the standpoint is not accepted. Maintaining or retracting a standpoint establishing the result of the discussion Requesting a usage declarative, definition, specification, amplification, etc.

3.3.3 The Dialectical Profiles of the Argumentative Move

Van Eemeren et al. (2007) mention the functions of argumentative indicators in the stages of critical discussion as follow:

3.3.3.1 Indicators of the Confrontation Stage

Three types of argumentative indicators can be found at this stage.

1- Proportional Attitude Indicators

These are shown in the following table.

Table 4

The Classification of Conformation Stage Indicators (Group1)

Proportional Attitude Indicators	Expressions	Examples
Weak Assertive Attitude	I believe that, I find that, I am of the opinion/take the view that, I think that, I suppose that, I assume that, I expect that, I suspect that, I have the impression that and It seems to me that	9) <i><u>I believe that</u> she is coming.</i>
Strong Assertive Attitude	I am sure/certain that and I am convinced that	10) <i><u>I am sure that</u> she is coming.</i>
Semi-assertive attitude	I know that	11) <i><u>I know that</u> John will come.</i>

2-Force Modifying Expressions

These are shown in the following table:

Table 5

The Classification of Confrontation Stage Indicators (Group2)

Force Modifying Expressions	Expressions	Example
Weak Assertive	in my opinion/judgment, in my view, to my mind as I see it ,it is likely/probable that, (probably) (supposedly) and it is right/true/the case/correct that (in fact, indeed)	<i>12) <u>In my opinion</u>, there's no sense in presenting the issue.</i>
Strong Assertive	It is beyond dispute/question/of doubt, it is clear/obvious that, it goes without saying that, there can be no two ways about it/there is no doubt that, it is certain that and it is unquestionably/absolutely certain (definite, absolute, real, actual, true, factual	<i>13) <u>It is obvious that</u> TV makes life fun, because since we have had television, we do not play games anymore.</i>
Semi- Assertive	it goes without saying that (self-evident, of course, natural)	<i>14)<u>It goes without saying that</u> John will come.</i>

The function of the propositional attitude indicators and force modifying expressions is presenting a standpoint in the discussion (Van Eemeren et al., 2007).

2- Dispute Indicators

Dispute indicators are implicit and explicit expressions of doubt. These indicators can be exemplified in the following expressions:

Table 6

Dispute Indicators

Dispute Indicators	I am not so sure about that, one can disagree about that, I do question/have doubts about that, that does raise some doubts in me, I dare say I have serious doubts about that, I am not completely sure about that, I have some objections against that, Couldn't it be different, I can't accept that without question, I wonder if that is (really) true, ,But is that really the case?, But perhaps it is not true and I don't know I am not too sure if... ? (Van Eemeren et al., 2007).
---------------------------	---

When these expressions are used, the proposition to which the viewpoint refers is usually directly challenged. Interrogative terms like "What do you mean" and "why?" are used to indicate doubt in some cases. It can be difficult to tell the difference between justification and clarification questions (Van Eemeren et al., 2007).

A- Requests for Clarification

For example:

15) *Hank buys all of Ann's clothes*

- *Who does he want to impress with that?*
- *What would I still be able to buy for her?*

- *Which husband wouldn't do that for a woman like Ann?*
- *Where does he buy these clothes?*
- *When did he tell you that?*
- *How did he come up with that idea?*
- *How do you mean? Does she have no taste?*

B- Requests for Justification

For example:

16) Hank buys all of Ann's clothes

- *Why would a woman let that happen, one wonders?*
- *Who made you think so?*
- *What kind of proof do you have for that?*
- *Which joker has been telling you tales?*
- *Where did you get that from?*
- *When did you make that up?*
- *How did you come up with that idea?*
- *How do you mean? Hasn't she always done it herself?*
- *Why do you think so?*

The inquiry in the A-instances, on the one hand, is always about a facet, a cause, or a result of the situation given in the preceding assertion (Hank buying all of Ann's clothes for her). The question in the B-examples, on the other hand, is always about the validity of the information offered by the speaker in the preceding assertion, or about the source's dependability (van Eemeren et al., 2007).

3.3.3.2 Indicators of the Opening Stage

The opening stage indicators are shown in table 7

Table 7

Indicators of the Opening Stage

Indicators of the Opening Stage	Go ahead and prove it, perhaps you can clarify this matter, please make it clear for us, can you explain that?, indicate a challenge to defend a viewpoint. The expression, go ahead and prove it, refers to a direct challenge to defend the opinion. The other expressions are used as indirect challenge to defend the standpoint. The expressions, I will tell you that, there are two arguments, are also based on certain signals, I will clarify this; refer to the participant's agreement of a one-sided burden of proof. The indicators, I have nothing at all to add to, I can only take a note of that, I can hardly force you to regard my explanation as logical, latter I will explain why, refer to refusal of a one-sided burden of prove (Van Eemeren et al., 2007)
---------------------------------	---

There are three types of burden of proof as follows:

- 1- One-sided burden of proof in which one of the participants in the argument bears the burden of proof supporting one or more viewpoints, whereas the other bears no such burden.
- 2- Distributed burden of proof in which each participant bears the burden of proof for their positions that are not diametrically opposed to those of the other.
- 3- Two-sided burden of proof in which each participant has the burden of proof for one or more viewpoints that are fundamentally opposed to the other's (Van Eemeren et al., 2007)

3.3.3.3 Indicators of the Argumentation Stage

Argumentation structure is "the way in which the reasons advanced, hang together and jointly support the standpoint that is defended" (van Eemeren, 2002, p.23). The argumentative indicators of this stage include: the indicators of subordinative and coordinative arguments. They are explained as follows:

1- Subordinative Argumentative Indicators

Subordinative argumentation is defined as the use of more than two reasons to support a participant's point of view. The reasons are listed in chronological order, which implies that one justification follows another in the discussion (Van Eemeren et al., 2007). The subordinative argumentative indicators are, because, for, therefore, thus, since because, for because, after all because, as since, that is why, and in view of.

For example:

17) *I would better not stay any longer, **because** I am so tired you just find me boring company.*

The speaker's point of view is supported by two sequential considerations. The speaker expresses a desire to return home (standpoint) because "he is tired" and "you just find him boring company."

2- Coordinative Argumentative Indicators

In coordinative argumentation, the arguments depend on each other and only together finish adequate support of a standpoint (Hietanen, 2007). The followings are some indicators of coordinative argumentation: in addition, as well as, on top of that, even, plus, not only, but, also, and more importantly.

For example:

18) *Paula: It must be a good film, because it is playing at the Rialto.*

Auton: It is not as if I never saw a bad film at the Rialto.

*Paula: Yes, **but** Theo was also very enthusiastic about it.*

Paula employs the word "but" in this argument to emphasize that she has gathered two arguments to support her position. "It has to be a good film," says the viewpoint. "Because it's playing at the Rialto," and "Theo was really enthusiastic about it," are the two arguments (Van Eemeren et al., 2002).

3.3.3.4 Indicators of the Concluding Stage

The indicators of this stage are shown in table 8

Table 8

Indicators of the Concluding Stage

Indicators of the Concluding Stage	I stand by my opinion, I maintain that, I stick to my opinion, I contend that, if that is the case, then, I have nothing to say against this, if that is true, I still insist, then you are, then, I still disagree with you, I still do not agree, that is indeed the case, you have not convinced me, and I gave up (Eemeren et al. 2007).
------------------------------------	---

For example:

19) *No, Wendi, **you have not convinced me yet.** I think I will come with some additional criticism.*

The statement "You haven't convinced me yet" is used to describe the concluding stage. The argument of the listener is insufficient to persuade the speaker.

According to Eemeren et al. (2007), the expressions: I stand by my opinion, I stick to my opinion, I contend that, I still insist, and I maintain that, are used to indicate that the protagonist maintains his or her opinion till the end of the discussion. The expressions: if that is the case, then, if that is true, then you are..., and then, this is indeed the case, indicate that the addressee changes

his or her viewpoint at the end of conversation. The expressions: I still disagree with you, I still do not agree, and you have not convinced me, are used to indicate that the antagonist keeps his or her suspicion at the last stage of the discussion. The indicators: I have nothing to say against this and I gave up, are used to show that the speaker removes his suspicion of the listener's standpoint. Thus, the listener wins the discussion.

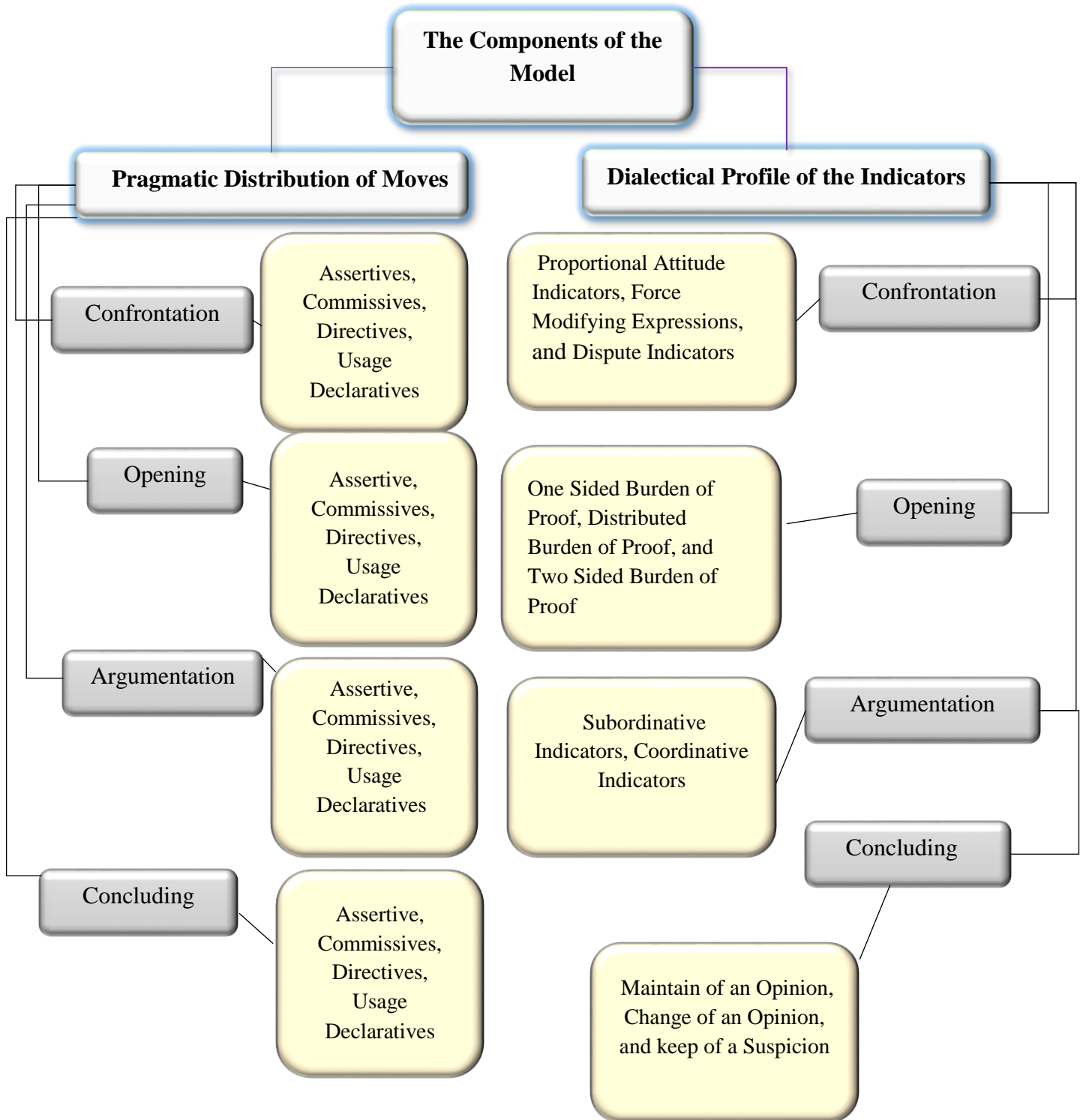
For example:

20) ***I contend that** the controversy with the Bush government has had a stimulating rather than a demoralizing effect on both the military and the non-military European increase of power.*

The components of the model are summarized in the following diagram.

Figure1

The Model of Critical Discussion



CHAPTER FOUR

DATA ANALYSIS AND DISCUSSION

4.0 Introductory Note

This chapter introduces the practical part of this study. It mainly describes the procedures of analysis and analyzes the targeted data based on the model. Additionally, it introduces the results of the analysis and their discussion.

4.1 Analytical Procedures

Pragma-dialectic argumentation is analyzed in terms of stages. These may not be entirely sequential. Discourse analysis employing pragma-dialectic approaches reconstructs the elements of a discourse which correspond to these stages: confrontation, opening, argumentation, and concluding. The process of analysis encompasses a number of procedures to be followed in accomplishing the current study. These procedures are as follows:

- 1- Locating and selecting the scripts of the four police interrogations conducted in the United States and Canada using the criteria outlined in the previous chapter (*c.f.*3.2.2).
- 2- Watching video recordings of police interrogations and comparing them to their scripts to confirm the resource's reliability and verify the scripts' accuracy.
- 3- Selecting some excerpts as samples for analysis and excluding the rest of the scripts from the thesis to avoid redundancy and lengthiness of the analysis. Excerpts are selected according to the stages of the argumentation. Sometimes, the stage needs more than one excerpt to be clarified.

- 4- Analyzing the data qualitatively in terms of the model described in Chapter Three. As it has been mentioned earlier, the data analysis of the present study will be both qualitative and quantitative using Chi-square.
- 5- Conducting a quantitative analysis by the SPSS program to figure out occurrences and frequencies of argumentative indicators on the police's part on the one hand and the suspects' on the other hand. Moreover, SPSS is employed to find out the most frequent argumentative indicator and whether the frequency is of significance or not.
- 6- Finally, discussing results, drawing conclusions, suggesting recommendations and suggestions for further research.

4.2 The Qualitative Analysis

This section displays the qualitative analysis of the American and Canadian samples.

4.2.1 The American Sample

The American sample contains two cases.

4.2.1.1 Analysis of Case 1

Background

The subsequent inquiry is focused on the murder of Yeardeley Love, George Hugueley's ex-girlfriend. Yeardeley and George were both students at the University of Virginia. They were also part of the collegiate lacrosse squad. The couple's relationship was tumultuous, with regular fighting, excessive drinking, and physical violence. Yeardeley allegedly sent George messages a week before the assassination, claiming that she had sexual intercourse with another guy while she was out of town. They found themselves face to face in a bar after a few days. Yeardeley then surged in with a vengeance. George's residence was

broken into. One of his roommate's girlfriends had to evict her because she was violent. Yeardeley refused to speak to George after the last bout. He did, however, attempt to contact her via email multiple times to discuss what had occurred.

On May 2, 2010, George decided to leave the bar and head to Yeardeley's place after a long day of drinking. He walked into Yeardeley's flat through the front entrance shortly after midnight. He kicked a hole in the door and banged his arm to open it after learning that Yeardeley would not let him inside her flat. Yeardeley yelled at him to leave and leave her alone as he continued to dispute with her about the prior events that had annoyed him. In an attempt to calm her down, George stated he shook her and battled with her. He then tossed her onto the bed and left. Yeardeley's roommate discovered the body and phoned the cops when she arrived at 2:15A.M. Huguely was officially convicted of second-degree murder for 23 years on August 30, 2012 ("Murder of Yeardeley Love,"2021).

In the following police interrogation, the participants are George Huguely, the suspect, and two police investigators

Excerpt 1

"George Huguely: I held her arms and stuff but like I never struck her, never like hit her... I was holding her but I never struck her or anything. And I think that might have been when her nose started to bleed, actually.

Investigator1: Just be honest.

George Huguely: Yeah, actually it was locked because I think I put a hole. Pretty sure it was locked now that you said that.

Investigator1: Why would you do that?

George Huguely: Because I wanted to talk to her. She's been sending me like emails.

Investigator1: So you kinda like tossed her on the bed and left.

George Huguely: Yeah.

Investigator1: Did you go back to check on her at any point?

George Huguely: No I did not.

Investigator1: Did you touch her neck area at all? Choke her at one point?"
(Appendix A. Case1, p. ii)

A. Confrontation Stage

After reciting Miranda rights, the interrogator addresses basic questions concerning George Huguely's job and academic status. The suspect takes the lead and presents his first standpoint (negative standpoint), using assertive type of speech act, which he will be responsible for defending later on during the interrogation: *"I was holding her but I never struck her or anything."* He claims that he has never struck or hit his girlfriend. The interrogator doubts George's alleged saying and engages in a debate with George using directive speech act, asking him to be honest: *"Just be honest"* and to clear things up. The two participants confront each other in a single non-mixed dispute. Now, George has to defend his standpoint against the doubts of the interrogator.

The detective asks George why he put a hole in the door utilizing directive speech act to ask for usage declarative: *"Why would you do that?"*. George gives clarification for his deed by employing usage declarative: *"Because I wanted to talk to her. She's been sending me like emails."*

When George is first questioned about how he got to the victim's residence, he claims that the door was left open. However, the expressions he uses indicate that he is lying; he employs force modifying expression, i.e., weak assertive: *"Actually, it might have been locked"*. His answers vary from weak assertives to strong ones. He uses weak assertive when he says that the door was open which is a lie. Soon he shifts to use proportional attitude indicator, strong assertive, when he tells the truth: *"I'm Pretty sure it was locked now."*

The interrogator is not convinced by George's mentioned standpoint, detective Best tries to obtain more information and makes her position clear that she is in a dispute with the suspect and demonstrates that by utilizing a dispute argumentative indicator, such as requests for clarifications and requests for

justifications: *"Did you touch her neck area at all? Choke her at one point?"*
"Did you go back to check on her at any point?"

The confrontation stage is marked by a series of requests for clarifications and justifications that pave the way for the next stage, in which Mr. Huguely is given the chance to justify his mentioned standpoint. This stage is recycled again during the interrogation. The events of the investigation have developed. The interrogator has an entirely different standpoint of what has been offered by the accused.

This stage is labeled as confrontation, and the argumentative moves of this stage are shown in Table 9.

Table 9

The Moves and Indicators of Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
George Huguely is a possible suspect in the murder of Love	Implicit standpoint	
<i>Suspect: "held her arms and stuff but like I never struck her, never like hit her"</i>	Negative standpoint	Assertive
<i>Detective: "Just be honest."</i>	Doubt	Directive
<i>Detective: "Why would you do that?"</i>	Request for usage declarative	Directive
<i>Suspect: "Because I wanted to talk to her. She's been sending me like emails."</i>	Clarification	Usage declarative
Confrontation Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type
<i>Detective: "Did you touch her neck area at all? Choke her at one point?"</i>	Dispute indicator	Request for clarification
<i>Detective: "Did you go back to check on her at any point?"</i>	Dispute indicator	Request for clarification

<i>Suspect: "I'm pretty sure she was very defensive."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Strong assertive
<i>Suspect: "Actually, it might have been locked."</i>	Force modifying expression	Weak assertive
<i>Suspect: "I think I put a hole."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Weak assertive
<i>Suspect: "Pretty sure it was locked now."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Strong assertive

Excerpt 2

"Investigator 1: Okay. She has a pretty good knot on her head.

George Huguely: I mean, I don't even know. A knot?

Investigator 1: On the sided of her head, she's been hit pretty good right there. So I'm just trying to figure out did you hit her with something?

*George Huguely: No. I never. Never touched her or struck her or anything...
Investigator 1: Well you touched her. You had your hands on her.*

*George Huguely: I said I never struck her. Never never at all like ...
Investigator 1: I'm trying to figure out why she has a black eye and why she's got a big lump right there... You're pretty pissed at her from a week ago for sending those text messages. Do you have those text messages where she said, as you said, "fucked" somebody?*

George Huguely: I actually might have those, yeah..... I'm sure there's emails that said she hooked up with somebody. I'm not lying about that."

(Appendix A. Case1, p.vi)

Previously, George has mentioned that he had never hit or struck his girlfriend. In this excerpt, the interrogator confronts him with a contrasting positive standpoint employing an assertive speech act: *"She has a pretty good knot on her head."* She does not stop at this point and goes further to set another positive standpoint about the assumed text messages that George received earlier from Yeardley.

George receives the first standpoint with doubt utilizing assertive speech act: *"I mean, I don't even know. A knot?"*, but he agrees with the second one to terminate the dispute. The interrogator insists that George had hit Yeardley with something and asks George to illustrate what has happened. She utilizes request for usage declarative saying: *"I'm just trying to figure out did you hit her with something?"*. The suspect replies with denial using usage declarative speech act and again hides the truth and confirms his previous position using force modifying expression, strong assertive, saying: *"No. I never. Never touched her or struck her or anything."*

The other standpoint introduced by the detective is about the text messages that George receives from his girlfriend. She utilizes a dispute argumentative indicator: *"Do you have those text messages?"* At this point, George terminates the dispute about the second standpoint because he knows that the electronic texts can be easily reached by the police and they can be saved in the phone or the laptop and there might be some information of help to him. Accordingly, he asserts using proportional attitude indicators, strong assertive, saying: *"I'm sure there's emails that said she hooked up with somebody"*.

Table 10 demonstrates the argumentative moves and the argumentative indicators of this stage.

Table 10

The Moves and Indicators of Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Detective: "She has a pretty good knot on her head."</i>	Positive standpoint	Assertive
<i>Detective: "You're pretty pissed at her from a week ago for sending those text messages."</i>	Positive standpoint	Assertive

<i>Suspect: "I mean, I don't even know. A knot?"</i>	Doubt	Assertive
<i>Detective: "I'm just trying to figure out did you hit her with something?"</i>	Request for usage declarative	Directives
<i>Suspect: "No. I never. Never touched her or struck her or anything... ."</i>	Clarification	Usage declarative
Confrontation Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type
<i>Detective: "I'm trying to figure out why she has a black eye?"</i>	Dispute indicator	Request for clarification
<i>Detective: "Do you have those text messages?"</i>	Dispute indicator	Request for clarification
<i>Suspect: "No. I never. Never touched her or struck her or anything..."</i>	Force modifying expression	Strong assertive
<i>Suspect: "I actually might have those, yeah."</i>	Force modifying expression	Weak assertive
<i>Suspect: "I'm sure there's emails that said she hooked up with somebody."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Strong assertive

Excerpt 3

"Investigator1: Alright. So when you left out of there you saw she was bleeding out her nose. Did you try to call rescue or anything to make sure she was alright?"

George Huguely: No, I did not...

Investigator1: Why?

George Huguely: Uh... I didn't think it was like, I didn't think she was like in need of going to the emergency room. She had like, a bloody

Investigator1: Why did you think that?

George Huguely: I don't know. I mean."

(Appendix A. Case1, p. vi)

B. The Opening Stage

In the opening stage, the disputants lay out their mutual concessions and agree to use them as a common starting point for discussion. Since George has proposed the original position, he is in obligation of defending it at this stage. As there are no apparent indicators rather than requests for clarifications, the

opening stage appears to be implicit in the excerpt above. The nature of police interrogation, which is logically deviant as a type of discourse, contributes to the implicitness of the stage.

Mr. Huguely has stated that he has never hit or assaulted Yeardley during the confrontation stage, however the interrogator says that Yeardley's nose is bleeding in the above excerpt; the interrogator uses an assertive speech act: *"Alright. So when you left out of there you saw she was bleeding out her nose"*. The interrogator asks if George did anything about that or not: *"Did you try to call rescue or anything to make sure she was alright?"*. She utilizes directive speech act challenging the suspect to defend his earlier statement. Since the interrogator has the legal authority to ask such questions, the suspect has the legal obligation to respond and accept the challenge to defend his position.

For not hurting or striking his dead girlfriend, George Huguely must bear the burden of proof. He appears cooperative and willing to bear the burden of proof by responding to the interrogator's questions, but he does not provide any excuses for his actions. All of his replies denote his guilt and he has indeed hit the victim: *"Uh... I didn't think it was like, I didn't think she was like in need of going to the emergency room. I don't know. I mean ..."*

The above argumentative moves and indicators are summarized in Table 11.

Table 11

The Moves and Indicators of Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Investigator: "Did you try to call rescue or anything to make sure she was alright?"</i>	Challenge to defend standpoint	Directive
<i>Suspect: "No, I did not..."</i>	Accept the challenge	Assertive
<i>Investigator: "why?"</i>	(Request for usage declarative)	Directives

<i>Suspect: "Uh... I didn't think it was like, I didn't think she was like in need of going to the emergency room. She had like, a bloody."</i>	Clarification	Usage declarative
---	---------------	-------------------

Excerpt 4

"Investigator 1: I'm trying to figure out why she has a black eye and why she's got a big lump right there?"

George Huguely: I mean, we... were... I mean...

Investigator1: So you don't know how it happened.

George Huguely: So she's got a black...

Investigator1: It's fine It's fine. Um, So you. I'm going through this one more time and make sure we're on the same page. You're pretty pissed at her from a week ago for sending those text messages. Do you have those text messages?"

George Huguely: I actually might have those, yeah.

Investigator1: Alright, you got your phone with you?"

Huguely: Yeah."

(Appendix A. Case1, p. vi)

As the confrontation stage is repeated in the interrogation, there should be an opening stage to address the investigator's novel point of view in relation to the victim's injury: *"She has a pretty good knot on her head."* The interrogator takes a different perspective than George; she tries to make him confess and convict him.

The investigator asks George to defend his earlier position; she utilizes a directive speech act to put the first point in the second opening stage: *"I'm trying to figure out why she has a black eye and why she's got a big lump right there?"* The suspect denies knowing anything about these happenings. George evades the answer and does not perform his role which is accepting the burden of proof to defend his standpoint. He clarifies to the police that he does not really know anything about the scars and the bruises on Yeardley's body. At this stage the interrogator fully controls the discussion because she has an eye evidence.

The moves and indicators of the opening stage are shown in Table 12.

Table 12*The Moves and Indicators of Opening Stage*

The Opening Stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Investigator: "I'm trying to figure out why she has a black eye and why she's got a big lump right there?"</i>	Challenge to defend standpoint	Directive
<i>Suspect: "I mean, we... were... I mean"</i>	Hesitation	
<i>Investigator: "So you don't know how it happened".</i>	Request for usage declarative	Directives
<i>Suspect: "So she's got a black..."</i>	Request for clarification	Directive

C. The Argumentation Stage

The murder of Yeardeley is based on several standpoints, so the accused must defend every point in this case with a convincing argument. The interrogator brings up a point about the bruises on George's arm, hinting that these scars are there because he has hit Yeardeley. George asserts that the scars are from lacrosse and not from his wrestling with his girlfriend. He employs a subordinative argument: *"This is all tanned because that's where gets sun, compared to like my legs [shows leg] the difference in color and that's, I got whacked. I remember one hundred percent. Got whacked when I was trying"*.

The second argument George advances is about the reason for kicking Yeardeley's door. George utilizes a subordinative argument to support his defense: *"because I sent her emails. Like six emails that were like "we need to talk, I'm coming over to talk to you" and like, and she actually did respond to those. Actually She did respond to those. She was like "fuck you, I'm not talking to you" like something along those lines."*

An argument by analogy is another argument given by George. He wants to provide a strong evidence of his innocence, so he constructs a reasonable argument to explain why he took the victim's laptop in the first place. He claims that when he removed her laptop, he had no intention of hiding anything. Therefore, he uses an analogous argument to get over the interrogator's questioning: *"you could look at my computer and see emails that are on my computer that are on her computer. Emails are It's not like her email account is erased because I took her computer. I have no idea why I took the computer. Probably because she was like not talking to me, and not like, she's did like all this stuff and I just walked out of there with her computer."*

The investigator wants to get more information about how the suspect's entered into the victim's house and why he entered in such ways. He uses directive speech act to request for more clarification: *"understand you had a lot of alcohol in you last night, okay? Do you think that maybe could have lead you to, why you, fed your emotions to kick in that door?"*. Huguely defends his position again and asserts that he just wants to talk and that he does not have any intention of breaking the door or hitting his girlfriend. This time, Huguely employs a coordinative argument: *"But it was all strictly to go in there and talk to her. I wanted to talk to her. I told her, I sent emails, you can see the emails, you can see everything. Said "we need to talk about this", I sent like three emails like "I want to come talk to you" then like "fuck yourself". I should not have gone over there when like, when I was drinking. But like that, that made me emotional so I wanted to go talk to her. That's why I kicked to the door. That's why I was trying. I wanted to talk to her"*.

The investigator requests another argument from Huguely, this time about the blood that comes out of the victim's nose. She asks: *"How did you see the blood and stuff coming out her nose?"*. George offers a subordinative argument to justify seeing the blood while the lights were off: *"Because she has a big bay*

window by her room and there's lights from the parking lot. And I mean, it's not hard, it's easy to see".

A final subordinative argument has been advanced by the investigator. He argues that George took the computer because he had threatened to kill Yeardley: "*Because you had threats to kill her on that from a past email because she hooked up with a player from UNC.*"

In this excerpt, the suspect is required to defend his position, so most of the arguments are advanced to defend him.

Table 13 shows the argumentative moves and indicators of the argumentation stage.

Table 13

The Moves and Indicators of Argumentation Stage

The Argumentation stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Investigator : "I thought you wore those padded gloves?"</i>	Requesting argumentation	Directive
<i>Suspect: "This is all tanned because that's where gets sun, compared to like my legs [shows leg] the difference in color and that's, I got whacked. I remember one hundred percent. Got whacked when I was trying "</i>	Advancing argumentation	Assertive
<i>Investigator : "Did you just go straight kick or did you knock first?"</i>	Requesting argumentation	Directive
<i>Suspect: "because I sent her emails. Like six emails that were like "we need to talk, I'm coming over to talk to you"</i>	Advancing argumentation	Assertive
The Argumentation Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type

Suspect : <i>"Probably because she was like not talking to me, and not like, she's did like all this stuff and I just walked out of there with her computer."</i>	Subordinative argument	Giving justification
Suspect : <i>"But it was all strictly to go in there and talk to her. I wanted to talk to her. I told her, I sent emails, you can see the emails, you can see everything."</i>	Coordinative argument	Giving justification
Investigator : <i>"Because you had threats to kill her on that from a past email"</i>	Subordinative argument	Criticism

D. The Concluding Stage

Prior to this stage, the suspect has repeatedly denied striking the victim; nevertheless, following a series of extended conversations with the detectives, he provides a partial confession of tossing her on bed and leaving her bleeding from her nose. In this stage, the investigator returns to the scene and confronts George of Yeardley's death with the previously provided information.

Detective Lisa informs the suspect that Yeardley is no longer alive at this stage. She makes it plain that she does not buy what George is saying and she totally rejects the suspect's earlier viewpoint. Detective Lisa employs commissive speech act to refute George's point of view: *"I don't believe that. I don't believe she banged her own head in the wall."*

George is astonished and couldn't believe the death of Yeardley: *"She is not dead, she is not dead,"* he says, rejecting detective Lisa's claim. George repeats, assertively, that the detective's statements are not to be believed.

The second interrogator begins to question the suspect. The interrogator maintains detective Lisa's point using a directive speech act to extract more information: *"Did you hold her head into the wall? Did you crack it? "*. George keeps denying and refuses to withdraw his viewpoint utilizing a usage

declarative: *"It didn't. I told you what happened. It didn't get out of control. She's not dead..."*

George employs usage declarative to maintain his position and denies the victim's death moreover. His reaction was exaggerated: *"It didn't. I told you what happened. It didn't get out of control. She's not dead, she's not dead, she's not dead. There's no way she's dead. There's no way! I didn't do! No way! There's no way!"*. Three argumentative indicators are employed by George: *"I refuse to believe that she is dead."*, *"There is no way"* and *"If you were honest you would have said murder charges"*. All of these statements indicate that Huguely is not convinced by the police and he refuses to withdraw his standpoint. Both of the parties maintain their position establishing the result of the discussion.

Table 14 explicates the argumentative moves and indicators of this stage.

Table 14

The Moves and Indicators of Concluding Stage

The concluding stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Investigator: "I don't believe that. I don't believe she banged her own head in the wall."</i>	Non acceptance of the stand point.	Commissive
<i>Suspect: "She is not dead, she is not dead."</i>	Repeating that the standpoint is not accepted.	Assertive
<i>Investigator : "Did you hold her head into the wall ?Did you crack it?"</i>	Maintaining a standpoint to establish the result of the discussion	Directive
<i>Suspect: "It didn't. I told you what happened. It didn't get out of control. She's not dead, she's not dead, she's not dead. There's no way she's dead. There's no way! I didn't do! No way! There's no way!"</i>	Amplification	Usage declarative

The Argument Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type
<i>Suspect: "I refuse to believe that she is dead."</i>	Concluding indicator	The argument of the speaker is insufficient to persuade the listener
<i>Suspect: "There is no way."</i>	Concluding indicator	The argument of the speaker is insufficient to persuade the listener
<i>Suspect: "If you were honest you would have said murder charges."</i>	Concluding indicator	The argument of the speaker is insufficient to persuade the listener

4.2.1.2 Analysis of Case 2

Background

Jodie Cecil and Bryan Greenwell were found guilty of murdering a woman and injuring her husband in Louisville's Shelby Park area. Derrell Wilson and Jennifer Cain, who lived next door to Jodie and Bryan, were the victims.

Jennifer Cain was shot multiple times and died as a result of her injuries on May 13, 2016. Derrell Wilson, meanwhile, was saved from certain death and played a key part in the suspects' confession. Derrell Wilson, who was still hospitalized and in poor health, said that Jodie and Bryan were both actively participating in the assault, according to police reports.

The accused were given a recording of Derrell Wilson and a police officer during the police interrogation. When Bryan and Jodie were faced with the victim's audio recording of the allegation, they claimed that their neighbors were involved in a domestic violence episode and rushed to assist. Derrell and Jennifer were shot by Bryan instead of settling the scene, as they likely planned. Bryan claimed he freaked out and didn't know what had happened, although Jodie claimed there was a battle over the gun (Lee, 2019a).

Excerpt 5

Bryan Greenwell: *Man, I can't, I just got out of jail. I don't know if she had that before I went in, or before right before I got out, or what. I think I was only there a couple weeks, maybe? Something like that. Maybe a little longer. I know it was like between two, two weeks. Two to three weeks. Something like that.*

Investigator: *And you guys never went back to that apartment? Bryan Greenwell: Yeah, we went back. Investigator: You did?*

Bryan Greenwell: *Yeah. We went back and got some of our stuff. I mean, we've seen the landlord and nothing was ever said. We've seen cops sitting there and nothing was ever said to us. And I was thinking "well, this aint got nothing to do with us, I hope"*

Investigator: *Did you know those neighbors? Ya'll never, you ever seen them before? Bryan Greenwell: Yeah, we've seen them in passing....*

Investigator: *If I showed you a picture of them, would you know who they are? Bryan Greenwell: Pretty sure I would be.*

Bryan Greenwell: *Yeah, yeah, that was her. Now the guy? Investigator: Now this is a little older picture. I think he had probably just got done. His hair may have been a lot longer. Bryan Greenwell: Hm, yeah. If you put long hair on him it looks like him.*

Investigator: *So you all didn't have any interaction with them?"*

(Appendix B. Case2, p. xx)

A. The Confrontation Stage

Detective Royce has informed the suspect of his rights and initiated the discussion, acting as the party who introduces the point of view in the critical discussion. The investigator does not challenge Greenwell directly during this police questioning, but he tacitly opens a conversation about Bryan's residence and confronts him as being part of the murder case being investigated: *"Let me take you back to that apartment on Shelby. How long did ya'll stay there?"*

Greenwell's neighbor and his wife are another implied viewpoint on which this investigation is based. This police interrogation is taking place because Greenwell and Jodie Cecil are accused of murdering Jennifer Cain and badly injuring her husband.

Bryan Greenwell and Detective Royce are involved in a multiple mix dispute. The investigator presents two opposing viewpoints, both of which Bryan rejects: *"Man, I can't, I just got out of jail. I don't know if she had that before I went in, or before right before I got out."* Greenwell follows this statement by proportional attitude indicator, weak assertive, which indicates that he might be hiding some facts.

The investigator asks Bryan about whether he knows his neighbor or not, utilizing the directive speech act: *"Did you know those neighbors? Ya'll never, you ever seen them before?"* Bryan confesses knowing them and utilizes proportional attitude indicator, strong assertive, saying: *"pretty sure I would be"*. He asserts knowing his neighbors. The investigator employs an implicit dispute indicator to make a request for clarification of whether Bryan has had any interaction with his neighbors or not: *"So you all didn't have any interaction with them?"*. Greenwell denies any engagement with them other than few chats, yet his argumentative indicator is weak assertive, which indicates that he is dishonest: *"I think it was what? One, two, two [crosstalk] yeah"*

At this stage the investigator raises two different standpoints to be discussed. The first one is about Bryan and Jodie's apartment which is terminated during the argumentation and the other is about their neighbors. This point is to be proved in the coming stage.

Table 15 demonstrates the argumentative moves and indicators of this stage.

Table 15*The Moves and Indicators of Confrontation Stage*

Confrontation Stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>"Implicit standpoint that Bryan and Jodie are involved in the murder, which took place in an apartment on Shelby."</i>	Implicit standpoint	Assertive
<i>"Implicit standpoint that Jodie and Greenwell have killed their neighbors."</i>	Implicit standpoint	Assertive
<i>"Implicit standpoint that Bryan and Jodie has nothing to do with murder incident."</i>	Implicit standpoint	Assertive
<i>Suspect: "Man, I can't, I just got out of jail. I don't know if she had that before I went in, or before right before I got out.."</i>	Rejecting the standpoint	Commissive
<i>Investigator: And you guys never went back to the apartment.</i>	Request for usage declarative	Directives
<i>Investigator: "Did you know those neighbors? Ya'll never, you ever seen them before?"</i>	Request for usage declarative	Directives
<i>Suspect: "Yeah, we went back."</i>	Clarification	Usage declarative
Confrontation Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type
<i>Investigator: "And you guys never went back to that apartment?"</i>	Dispute indicator	Request for clarification
<i>Investigator: "So you all didn't have any interaction with them?"</i>	Dispute indicator	Request for clarification
<i>Suspect : "I think I was only there a couple weeks, maybe."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Weak assertive
<i>Suspect: "pretty sure I would be".</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Strong assertive
<i>Suspect: "I think it was what? One, two, two [crosstalk] yeah".</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Weak assertive

Excerpt 6

Investigator: *What happened over there? What have you heard? What do you know?*

Bryan Greenwell: *I just heard that somebody got shot, somebody got killed or something like that. Then we stayed away for a couple days because that's when I found out that supposedly they were there for her, and us, you know what I'm saying? It was supposed to be us. I was like, you know, um, we made the decision to stay away for a couple of days because hell, somebody wanted to talk to her they, the landlord knew her phone number, her cell phone number, knew her name, everything else. Nobody ever tried to contact us. At least, as far as I know, nobody ever tried to contact us. Which I mean the house, the apartment wasn't even, it was her apartment, wasn't in my name, or nothing like that.*

Investigator: *Right. Alright. Did you know that there were two victims there? Did you know that?*

Bryan Greenwell: *No.*

Investigator: *Both of those two people I showed you.*

Bryan Greenwell: *No, they told me it was just the.. uh.. lady.*

Investigator: *Well, both of them were shot. And uh, this is what I want to show you."*

(Appendix B. Case2, p xx)

B. The Opening Stage

In the previous stage, two points of view are offered. One of them, which is about the residents of Bryan and Jodie, is terminated. The other is that Jodie and Bryan are accused of murdering their neighbors. This point is opened for discussion in this excerpt.

Detective Royce utilizes the directive speech act to challenge the suspect to defend his position as being innocent: "*What happened over there? What have you heard? What do you know?*" He asks the suspect to clarify the events that has happened near their resident to confirm his innocence.

Greenwell employs an opening stage indicator to accept the change: "*I just heard that somebody got shot, somebody got killed or something like that*".

The norms of police interrogations require the accused to defend his position, but they do not require the investigator to do so. As such, Bryan accepts the challenge to defend his viewpoint in one-sided burden of proof. Greenwell defends his position with a lie: "*I just heard that somebody got shot, somebody got killed or something like that*". He denies shooting them. This move leads to undesirable consequence on the part of the suspect.

The police interrogator utilizes a directive speech act to request a usage declarative: "*Did you know that there were two victims there?*" Despite the fact that he is the one who shot them, the suspect denies knowing there were two victims. He emphasizes that he was told that the woman was the only one who was shot: "*I just heard that somebody got shot, somebody got killed or something like that...*" Bryan wants to establish his previous assertion that he had no connection to the victims and knows them only through chitchat.

This stage is brought to a close by Detective Royce's presentation of new evidence: A video clip in which the injured guy claims Bryan and Jodie are involved in his wife's murder was shown to Jodie, who stated that Bryan was the one who shot them. Greenwell must now defend himself against a novel viewpoint.

Table 16 shows the argumentative moves and indicators of this stage.

Table 16

The Moves and Indicators of Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Investigator: "What happened over there? What have you heard? What do you know?"</i>	Challenge to defend standpoint	Directive
<i>Suspect: "I just heard that somebody got shot, somebody got killed or something like</i>	Acceptance of the challenge to defend	Commissive

<i>that....."</i>	the standpoint	
<i>Investigator: " Right. Alright. Did you know that there were two victims there?"</i>	Request for usage declarative	Directives
<i>Suspect : " No"</i>	Usage declarative	Specification
The Opening Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type
<i>Investigator: "What have you heard?"</i>	Indicator of the opening stage	Challenge to defend opinion
<i>Suspect: " I just heard that somebody got shot"</i>	Indicator of the opening stage	One-sided burden of proof

C. The Argumentation Stage

At this point, both the suspect and the investigator provide a number of counter-arguments. Each one tries to persuade the other of his point of view. According to the dialectal profile for the argumentation stage, this stage starts with a directive speech act to seek an argument.

Detective Royce asks for an argument using the directive speech act: *"Does that sound like a fair statement of how things may have occurred?"* The suspect advances two arguments; coordinative argument: *"But, that's it. You can find my fingerprints on a couple of things if you finger print the place."* and the subordinative one: *"because where I walked into the room, I kind of picked some stuff up, you know, because it was laying everywhere so I was like, I mean, other than that."* In both of them, the suspect wants to prove that he was just trying to help and had no intent to hide anything since his finger prints were all over the house and he did nothing to remove them.

To get Greenwell supply further information, the investigator accepts these arguments and uses the directive speech act to request a usage declarative: *"What do you mean you do this every time?"* Bryan, on the other hand, uses usage declarative to emphasize that he is always protecting and helping people: *"I always try to protect everybody."*

Detective Royce makes several arguments to persuade Greenwell to share his side of the incident. Subordinative argument is used by the investigator to encourage the suspect to reveal the truth about what happened to Jennifer Cain and Derrell: *"Because there's a big difference between you going in and saying 'I'm going to f*** kill somebody' and you going in 'I'm trying to help somebody' and then shit goes bad."* He backs up his previous argument with a second coordinative argument in order to persuade Bryan that there is a substantial difference between killing and helping: *"And one's a whole lot better than the other."* Detective Royce uses another coordinative argument to persuade Bryan that he has enough information to leave the room, but he wants a fair interrogation: *"because I believe in getting everybody a fair shot at this"*.

Bryan Greenwell insists that he was just trying to help and he had no intention to harm the couple utilizing subordinative argument: *"Cause I guess her or something like that. So I walked in there and I separated them and this and that. That's when, to be honest with you, I don't even, I can't even remember how the gun came into play, for real"*

Table 17 shows the argumentative moves and indicators of this stage.

Table17*The Move and Indicators of Argumentation Stage*

The Argumentation Stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Investigator : "Does that sound, is that a fair statement of how things may have occurred?"</i>	Requesting argumentation	Directive
<i>Suspect: "But, that's it. I mean hell, if you finger print the place you can find my fingerprints on a couple things because where I walked in the room. I kind of picked some stuff up, you know, because it was laying everywhere so I was like I mean, other than that."</i>	Advancing argumentation	Assertive
<i>Investigator: "Alright."</i>	Accepting the argumentation	Commissive
<i>Investigator: " What do you mean you do this every time?"</i>	Requesting a usage declarative	Directive
<i>Suspect: " I always try to protect everybody."</i>	Usage declarative	Amplification
The Argumentation Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type
<i>Investigator: "Because there's a big difference between you going in and saying "I'm going to f*** kill somebody" and you going in "I'm trying to help somebody" and then shit goes bad."</i>	Subordinative argument	Convincing the suspect to confess
<i>Investigator: "And one's a whole lot better than the other."</i>	Coordinative argument	Convincing the suspect to confess
<i>Investigator: " I could walk out of the room but that's not what I want to do because I believe</i>	Coordinative argument	Trying to get more information

<i>in getting everybody a fair shot at this."</i>		
Suspect: <i>"Cause I guess her or something like that. So I walked in there and I separated them and this and that. That's when, to be honest with you, I don't even, I can't even remember how the gun came into play, for real."</i>	Subordinative argument	Defending pervious standpoint

D. The Concluding Stage

The parties must determine the outcome of a considerable disagreement at the end of the discussion. This means they must work together to decide whether the protagonist has effectively defended his initial position or whether the antagonist has successfully attacked it. The goal is to determine who has the right to preserve his initial opinion at the conclusion of the debate and who must withdraw his first position.

Bryan Greenwell utilizes a commissive speech act to accept the standpoint initiated by detective Royce: *"Yeah. There's a big difference. I mean, I shouldn't have went with my gut and just stayed out of it."* Again, he employs assertive speech act to repeat Detective Royce's viewpoint is accepted: *"that wasn't what I wanted."*

The investigator utilizes indirect directive speech act to request a usage declarative: *"No?"*. He establishes the end of the discussion employing usage declarative: *"And you've done yourself big time favors here. You've done the best you can for yourself with the"*

The suspect employs two argumentative indicators at this stage to suggest that he has changed his mind at the end of the conversation: *"I shouldn't have went with my gut and just stayed out of it."* He regrets going into their apartment. Finally, he states they just needed help and he wanted to help them: *"If I see somebody needs help, I try to help."*

Table 18 explicates the argumentative moves and indicators of this stage.

Table 18

The Moves and Indicators of Concluding Stage

The concluding stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Suspect: "Yeah. There's a big difference. I mean, I shouldn't have went with my gut and just stayed out of it".</i>	Acceptance of the stand point.	Commissive
<i>Suspect : "that wasn't what I wanted"</i>	Repeating that the standpoint is accepted.	Assertive
<i>Investigator: "No?"</i>	Requesting usage declarative	Directive
<i>Suspect: "And you've done yourself big time favors here. You've done the best you can for yourself with the situation you're in."</i>	Definition	Usage declarative
The Concluding Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type
<i>Suspect: "I shouldn't have went with my gut and just stayed out of it."</i>	Concluding indicator	The addressee changes his viewpoint at the end of conversation
<i>Suspect: "If I see somebody needs help, I try to help."</i>	Concluding indicator	The addressee changes his viewpoint at the end of conversation

4.2.2 The Canadian Sample

This section displays the Canadian samples cases.

4.2.2.1 Analysis of Case 3

The first Canadian case is analyzed in this section.

Background

David Russell Williams is a convicted double-murderer and former colonel of the Canadian Armed Forces who was sentenced to life in prison in

2010. The Ontario Provincial Police discovered evidence in late January 2010 that led them to suspect Williams' participation in the disappearance and killing of Jessica Lloyd, as well as suspected links to two other crimes perpetrated near Williams' prior home in Tweed, Ontario. On February 7, Williams was faced with evidence of tire tracks and boot prints at Lloyd's residence and was interviewed on camera by OPP investigator Jim Smyth.

Jessica Lloyd, a 27-year-old woman, went missing on January 28, 2010. Investigators discovered unusual wheel traces in the snow along her property's north tree line, some 100 meters north of her house. From 7:00 P.M. on February 4, 2010, to 6:00 A.M. the next morning, the Ontario Provincial Police performed a comprehensive canvassing of all motorists using the roadway near her residence, seeking for the peculiar tire treads. Williams was driving his Nissan Pathfinder that day instead of his BMW, and an officer observed the treads on his tires were similar. Following that, the treads near Lloyd's house were matched.

On February 7, 2010, Williams was phoned by the Ottawa Police Service and requested to come in for questioning at his newly built home in the Ottawa suburb of Westboro, where his wife lived full-time and he lived part-time.

OPP Detective Staff Sergeant Jim Smyth interrogated Williams at the police headquarters on February 7, 2010. Beginning at 3:00 P.M., Williams was confronted with the evidence gathered thus far, with the interrogation lasting nearly 10 hours in all. Williams began confessing to his crimes at 7:45 P.M. Williams detailed and acknowledged to dozens of offences in his confession, including the sexual assaults in Tweed. The majority of the assaults in Ottawa happened within walking distance of his new home, where he and his wife lived. There were other break-ins and thefts in Belleville and Tweed, where the couple kept a cottage since 2004.

Williams was sentenced on October 21, 2010, to two life terms for first-degree murder, two ten-year sentences for other sexual assaults, two ten-year sentences for forcible imprisonment, and 82 one-year sentences for breaking and entering, all of which will be served consecutively. Williams will serve a minimum of 25 years before being eligible for release because of his life sentences. Williams is not eligible for early parole under the Criminal Code's "faint hope clause" because he was convicted of many murders ("Russell Williams (Criminal)", 2022)

Excerpt 7

"Detective: Um, cause essentially uh, there's a, a, a, connection, um, between you and uh, and all four of those cases. Would you agree, geographically?"

Russell Williams: And that I, I guess I drive past, uh, yes, uh

Detective: Um, so essentially, uh, then the connection with Miss Comeau, um...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...was made. Um, and I believe you're uh, a door or two down from one of the two, uh, incidents, uh....

Russell Williams: Think, uh...

Detective: ...in Tweed.

Russell Williams: ... three doors down, yeah.

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: Very close, absolutely."

(Appendix C. Case3, p. xxxii)

A. Confrontation Stage

Confessions must be obtained willingly, as previously stated, in order to be considered credible. As a result, Smyth has informed Williams that he is a person in authority and that he is not under arrest and that he might leave at any time. He also informs Williams of his right to legal representation.

It is evident that a viewpoint is not accepted at the confrontation stage of a critical discussion because it confronts doubts or objections, implying a difference of opinion. Although a difference of opinion can be communicated directly, it is more likely to stay implicit in practice.

At this point, sergeant Jim Smyth and Russell Williams have an unspoken disagreement concerning four murder cases. With an assertive speaking act, the investigator confronts Williams: " *essentially uh, there's a, a, a, connection, um, between you and uh, and all four of those cases*". He asserts that Russell is linked to the aforementioned murder cases.

The suspect implies that the detective's opinion is dubious. He acknowledges that there is a link, but it is just because he lives close to the crime scene. He rejects the viewpoint with a commissive speech act: " *And that I, I guess I drive past, uh, yes, uh*".

Detective Smyth and Williams are now involved in a single non-mix dispute that must be resolved. The investigator employs a series of usage declaratives to elicit further information about Russell's work date and the time he leaves the house to sleep at his workplace: " *when did you start working there*" and " *And then what time do you leave to go to the base to sleep there on the Friday night?*"

In answer to both of the investigator's requests for clarification, the suspect uses usage declaratives. " *Friday on the day I was at home most the time, most the day* " and " *so I probably left Tweed at between 8 or 9 or so*". A base commander, especially one as intelligent as Williams, would be expected to have vivid memories. Williams appears to be suffering from stress-induced dissonance and is having trouble articulating his reactions.

The investigator's argumentative indicators are primarily proportional attitude indicators and weak assertions. Because he does not want the suspect to be stressed. As it is noticed, the interrogator tells Russell that he is free to depart whenever he wants. The interrogator does not employ harsh aggressive language. He does not make any of the claims with conviction, because he wants the suspect to confess: " *I think you discussed with the fact that you were a, uh, a, a, Colonel.*"

The investigator utilizes weak assertive to indicate that the incident occurred near Russell's home. Despite the fact that he is certain of the location of the murder, he does not make a forceful statement to reduce the threat to the suspect: "*I believe you're uh, a door or two down from one of the two, uh, incidents, uh*"

The suspect, on the other hand, utilizes weak assertives since he does not give complete responses. He only wants the conversation to go as smoothly as possible. First, he makes a weak assertion about the incident's location: "*I guess I drive past.*" He is certain of the location, but he wants to make clear that he is not.

The suspect uses a number of proportional weak assertives in response to each question he hears from detective sergeant Smyth: "*I think that is the case*" The suspect uses weak assertive to tell the investigator that he has been in his Tweed home for the past week. Williams uses another weak statement to explain when he has left his home in Tweed.: "*So I probably left Tweed at between 8 or 9 or so*".

Table 19 demonstrates the argumentative moves and indicators of this stage.

Table 19

The Moves and Indicators of Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Investigator:</i> "Essentially uh, there's a, a, a, connection, um, between you and uh, and all four of those cases."	Positive standpoint	Assertive
<i>Suspect:</i> "And that I, I guess I drive past, uh, yes, uh..."	Doubt	Commissive

<i>Investigator: " when did you start working there?"</i>	Request for usage declarative, dispute indicator	Directive
<i>Investigator: "And then what time do you leave to go to the base to sleep there on the Friday night?"</i>	Request for usage declarative, dispute indicator	Directive
<i>Suspect: " Friday, on the day I was, um, hm. Friday on the day I was at home most the time, most the day. I had the start of a stomach flu."</i>	Clarification	Usage declarative
<i>Suspect : "so I probably left Tweed at between 8 or 9 or so."</i>	Clarification	Usage declarative
Confrontation Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type
<i>Suspect: " I guess I drive past. "</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Weak assertive
<i>Investigator: " I think you discussed with the fact that you were a, uh, a, a, Colonel."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Weak assertive
<i>Investigator: "essentially uh, then the connection with Miss Comeau".</i>	Force modifying expression	Weak assertive
<i>Investigator : " I believe you're uh, a door or two down from one of the two, uh, incidents, uh"</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Weak assertive
<i>Suspect: " Think , uh ..."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Weak assertive
<i>Suspect: "I think that is the case."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Weak assertive
<i>Suspect: "I think it was 7 or 8 really."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Weak assertive
<i>Suspect : "So I probably left Tweed at between 8 or 9 or so."</i>	Force modifying expression	Weak assertive

Excerpt 8

"Detective: Alright, and what did you do Thursday during the day?"

Russell Williams: *Thursday during the day I was at the base again. Um, I think it was a very standard day. I can't recall exactly but uh, yeah, nothing. Was not flying so I was at the base so I would have gone in early in the morning, back in the evening again.*

Detective: *Okay, do you remember what time you left the base that night?*

Russell Williams: *[sigh] Mm... I don't remember anything peculiar so I would say, uh, I don't know. Probably 7 to 9 somewhere in that range.*

Detective: *Okay, that's when you left?*

Russell Williams: *Left the base, yeah.*

Detective: *And what, what's...*

Russell Williams: *It's a 45minute transit so...*

Detective: *45minutes home.*

Russell Williams: *Yeah.*

Detective: *Now, I'm not going to walk you through November but I'm going to take you to a date that's probably pretty fresh in your mind, uh, uh, the day that, uh, that Marie-France, uh, Comeau...*

Russell Williams: *Yeah.*

Detective: *Um, do you remember how you found out, uh...*

Russell Williams: *I do, yeah. I was sent an email, um [sighs]. Well, as soon as the, uh, off staff in the base learned they told me.*

Detective: *Okay."*

(Appendix C. Case3, p. xxxiii)

B. The Opening Stage

Williams is asked to give a detailed description of his location at the time of the murders. The Detective does so by asking him a series of broad questions about his job and schedule. Smyth then moves on to the circumstances surrounding the first murder, at that point Williams becomes irritated.

Williams refutes the allegations that he has any information regarding the four victims. When the interrogator inquires about his coworker, Marie France Comeau, he denies knowing her personally. The dispute between Sergeant Smyth and Russell must enter the preliminary stage in order to resolve and settle their differences of opinion.

Williams has been tacitly challenged by the investigator to prove his innocence and lack of involvement in the aforementioned murder occurrence. In

order to discover the truth, the interrogator asks the suspect a series of questions. In police interrogation, the suspect almost always needs to accept the task of defending his position and a one-sided burden of proof.

The investigator utilizes a directive speech act to challenge the suspect to defend his innocence: "*what did you do Thursday during the day?*" The suspect accepts the challenge implicitly by his cooperative replies: "*Thursday during the day I was at the base again. Um, I think it was a very standard day...*". To gather more evidence, Detective Sergeant Smyth recruits a usage declarative. He inquires about when the suspect left his workplace: "*Do you remember what time you left the base that night?*"

Clearly, Williams is sputtering and having great difficulty communicating. The Detective does not interrupt him and kept nodding and saying things like "okay": "*I don't remember anything peculiar so I would say, uh, I don't know. Probably 7 to 9 somewhere in that range.*" Regardless of his response, he has problems recalling and communicating. It is clear that Williams is experiencing stress-induced dissonance and was having a difficult time articulating his responses.

Smyth then inquires about Williams' relationship with Comeau. Williams tells Smyth that he only met her once, and that it was on an old business journey.

Table 20 shows the argumentative moves and indicators of this stage

Table 20

The Moves and Indicators of Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Investigator:</i> " <i>what did you do Thursday during the day?</i> "	Challenge to defend standpoint	Directive
<i>Suspect:</i> " <i>Thursday during the day I was at the base again. Um, I think it was a very standard day. I can't recall exactly but uh,</i>	Acceptance of the challenge to defend the	Commissive

<i>yeah, nothing"</i>	standpoint	
Investigator: <i>"Do you remember what time you left the base that night?"</i>	Request for usage declarative	Directive
Suspect: <i>"I don't remember anything peculiar so I would say, uh, I don't know. Probably 7 to 9 somewhere in that range."</i>	Usage declarative	Specification
The Opening Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type
Investigator: <i>"do you know Marie France Comeau?"</i>	Indicator of the opening stage	Challenge to prove the suspect innocence
Suspect: <i>"I only met her once. Um, she was on a crew, uh, I was on, uh, just after I got to the base."</i>	Indicator of the opening stage	One-sided burden of proof

C. The Argumentation Stage

At this point, there are several arguments on both the investigator's and the suspect's sides. Each of them seeks to prove his point of view. Smyth has previously given Williams every opportunity to provide his side of the story, but Williams has failed to respond in a convincing manner.

Williams is questioned by Detective Smyth about why his swipe card was not used on the day of Comeau's death. Williams responds that he was in Ottawa with his wife having dinner: *"do you remember being at the Base on the Monday, uh, the 23rd and swiping your card in and out."*

Russell makes a subordinative argument for why he has not swiped his card at the base. He states that he had a meeting outside of the base, in Ottawa. Detective Smyth accepts the argument introduced by Williams. The Detective continues to offer Williams with every opportunity to explain himself. He utilizes directive speech act to request a usage declarative: *"you leave the, the meeting in Ottawa, is it a daytime meeting, an evening meeting or do you*

remember?" The Detective inquires again about what they had for supper, but Williams is unable to recall. He cannot recall who had paid either.

Table 21 explicates the argumentative moves and indicators of this stage.

Table 21

The Moves and Indicators of Argumentation Stage

The Argumentation stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Investigator : " Do you remember being at the Base on the Monday, uh, the 23rd and swiping your card in and out"</i>	Requesting argumentation	Directive
<i>Suspect: "I would not have been at the Base, uh, the day I was in Ottawa 'cause the meeting started at eight thirty or something"</i>	Advancing argumentation	Assertive
<i>Investigator : "Okay, so you leave the Base, you would've went home to, to your residence in Tweed".</i>	Accepting the argumentation	Commissive
<i>Investigator: "you leave the, the meeting in Ottawa, is it a daytime meeting, an evening meeting or do you remember?"</i>	Requesting a usage declarative	Directive
<i>Suspect: "We had lunch and then uh, finished. I think uh, my wife and I had dinner 'cause she was here for work and then I headed back"</i>	Usage declarative	Specification
The Argumentation Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type
<i>Investigator: " cause that's where our house was being built at the time so we had dinner. You know, in a restaurant that we would expect to be able to frequent, uh, once the house was finished."</i>	Subordinative argument	Telling his place and company

D. The Concluding Stage

The Detective has not showed Williams any evidence up to this time. He has not told Williams that his tire tracks matched those of a vehicle seen off-road near Jessica Lloyd's the night she was murdered. He always gives Williams the chance to make his own confession.

Williams has not confessed after nearly four and a half hours. Despite the length of the interview and Williams' deception, the Detective and Colonel maintain a collegial relationship throughout the interrogation. In fact, just before Williams has confessed, Smyth called him "bud."

At this stage the suspect confesses his crimes. He implicitly admits his crime. "*You need a real map,*" Russell says. The act of exposing the suspect's body implies that he has admitted his guilt. He wants a map once more to show the investigator the exact location of Jessica's body. To admit his guilt of murdering, the suspect uses an assertive speech act.

Detective Smyth utilizes a directive speech act to request more information about Jessica's body: "*Okay, is she close to a road?*" Williams begins to cooperate. He merely wants his wife to be away of the situation. Williams reveals the horrible facts of his crimes to Smyth. Throughout each minute detail, Smyth listens to Williams without passing judgment.

Despite the terrible nature of the crimes, Smyth continues to address Williams with respect. Throughout the interview, this collegial relationship is maintained. Williams and Smyth continue to work together despite the fact that Smyth is the one who has brought Williams to his grave. The collaboration between Smyth and Williams is crucial in saving the judicial process from a costly and time-consuming trial that would have deepened the victims' sorrow. Table 22 explicates the argumentative moves and indicators of this stage.

Table 22*The Moves and the Indicators of Concluding Stage*

The Concluding stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Suspect: "you need more, you need a real map."</i>	Implicit Acceptance of the stand point.	Assertive
<i>Suspect: "You need a, a detailed map of that area and I'll show you where she is..."</i>	Repeating that the standpoint is accepted.	Assertive
<i>Investigator: "Okay, is she close to a road?"</i>	Requesting usage declarative	Directive
<i>Suspect: "Yep."</i>	Specification	Usage declarative

4.2.2.2 The Analysis of Case 4**Background**

On April 8, 2009, the accused, Michael T. Rafferty, allegedly asked Terri-Lynne McClintic to kidnap an 8-year-old girl, Victoria (Tori) Stafford, from outside her school for him by asking her to meet a puppy. In April 2009, eight-year-old Victoria (Tori) Stafford vanished outside her Woodstock, Ont., school. Her sexually tortured body was discovered in July of that year near Mount Forest, Ontario, some 100 kilometers from her home.

Stafford left Oliver Stephens Public School to go home at 3:30 P.M. on April 8, 2009, and was recorded on security video at 3:32 P.M. being led down Fyfe Avenue, Woodstock, by a lady. When she did not return home, her grandma reported her missing at 6:04 P.M.

On May 20, 2009, police accused Michael Thomas Christopher Stephen Rafferty, 28, with first-degree murder and Terri-Lynne McClintic, 18, with

being an accessory to murder in Stafford's kidnapping and suspected murder. According to the Ontario Provincial Police, Stafford's mother knew McClintic. After her arrest, McClintic aided police in their hunt for Stafford's remains, and her lawyer indicated that her client wants Tori's family to know she was working hard to find her body (Jones, 2016).

A. The Confrontation Stage

Detective Smyth provides a variety of explicit standpoints at this phase, in addition to one significant implicit viewpoint on which the entire interrogation is based. The investigator employs an assertive speech act to present his confrontation with Michael Rafferty: "*you are responsible for one (threat).*" In this line, the investigator accuses Rafferty of posing a threat to the community. Another allegation raised by Detective Smyth is that Michael's car was seen in a video during the abduction: "*The reality of it is your vehicle is on the video.*"

Detective Smyth presents a final point of view, claiming that Rafferty is involved in a car theft: "*I think you are involved in a car thefts and stuff.* Michael Rafferty uses a commissive speech act to deny all of the issues mentioned: "*I didn't do anything*" The investigator and the suspect are in a multiple-mixed dispute, so each of them should present an argument to support their position.

The investigator employs a semi-assertive argumentative indicator to demonstrate to the suspect that he is well aware of what happened since he has evidence: "*I am aware of that stuff, I'm aware of what happened.*" He also brings up a prior incident. This time he uses a weak assertive to give the suspect space and minimize the intensity: "*I think you are involved in some vehicle theft.*"

The investigator uses a strong assertive to show the suspect that he is compassionate sympathetic and tries to persuade Michael to speak up: "*I'm sure*

you are quite upset and quite concerned about what happened." Then he shifts to proportional attitude indicator, semi-assertive to assert that he knows what happened and he is sure that the crime is not done by Rafferty alone: *"I know you didn't do this alone."*

Finally, the interrogator uses weak assertive to convince Michael that he believes he did not kill on purpose and that he regrets what happened. However, employing weak assertive implies that detective Smyth is merely manipulating the suspect to make him feel relieved to confess: *"I really believe if you could turn back time ..."*

Table 23 explicates the argumentative moves and indicators of this stage

Table 23

The Moves and Indicators of Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>"Michael Rafferty is accused of abducting and murdering an eight years old child"</i>	Implicit standpoint	
Investigator: <i>"you are responsible for one (threat)."</i>	Positive standpoint	Assertive
Investigator: <i>"The reality of it is your vehicle is on the video."</i>	Positive standpoint	Assertive
Investigator: <i>"I think you are involved in a car thefts and stuff."</i>	Positive standpoint	Assertive
Suspect: <i>"I didn't do anything."</i>	Reject	Commissive
Suspect: <i>"I am not the only innocent person who's ever been arrested."</i>	Clarification	Usage declarative
Confrontation Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type
Suspect: <i>"I am aware of that stuff, I'm aware of what happened."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Semi-assertive
Investigator: <i>"I think you are involved in some vehicle theft."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Weak assertive

<i>Investigator: "I'm sure you are quite upset and quite concerned about what happened."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Strong assertive
<i>Investigator: "I know you didn't do this alone."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Semi-assertive
<i>Suspect: "I really believe if you could turn back time ..."</i>	Proportional attitude indicator	Weak assertive

B. The Opening Stage

The investigator uses a directive speech act to engage the suspect in discussion and to challenge Rafferty to defend his viewpoint: "*Why you did this what caused you to do this?*". Rafferty remains silent, he does not have any justification for his action. Detective Smyth employs a directive speech act to elicit information from the suspect regarding the crime. To elicit the necessary information, he presents himself as friendly and nonjudgmental: "*Is it something you have done before and you have been involved in the death of other people?*"

The suspect likewise remains silent since he does not want to talk and reveal the entire incident. Detective Smyth employs a number of argumentative indicators in an attempt to open communication between himself and Michael in order to assess the situation, but they are fruitless. He employs an opening stage indicator to persuade the suspect to have at least a conversation with him. He tells Michael that communicating is critical at this time since people always assume the worst. People will regard you as a monster if you remain silent. All of his efforts are futile: "*I need to have a discussion.*"

He presses Michael once more to defend his position and explain his mental reasoning for kidnapping and killing an eight-year-old child. He employs an opening stage indicator: "*You need to be realistic about this.*" As Michael remains speechless, detective Smyth informs the suspect that all he has now is his credibility and honesty because the facts cannot be changed: "*You*

need to be honest you need to understand your credibility Mike is all you have left."

Table 24 explicates the argumentative moves and indicators of this stage

Table 24

The Moves and Indicators of Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Investigator: "Why you did this what caused you to do this?"</i>	Challenge to defend standpoint	Directive
<i>Investigator: "Is it something you have done before and you have been involved in the death of other people?"</i>	Request for usage declarative	Directive
The Opening Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type
<i>Investigator: "I need to have a discussion."</i>	Indicator of the opening stage	Challenge the suspect to defend himself
<i>Investigator: "You need to be realistic about this."</i>	Indicator of the opening stage	Challenge the suspect to talk
<i>Investigator : "You need to be honest you need to understand your credibility Mike is all you have left"</i>	Indicator of the opening stage	Challenge the suspect to say the truth

C. The Argumentation Stage

At this point, both parties present arguments to support their opposing viewpoints. The investigator demands an argument through the use of a directive speech act: *"What cause you to do what you did? What would cause you to get involved in an incident like this?"* The suspect makes no counter-argument and remains silent. Detective Smyth insists on requesting an argument to explain the events of the incident, but Michael makes no response: *"What pushed you to this point? what caused you to do this?"*

The suspect's denial of the incident requests that the investigator provides evidence to back up his claim. The interrogator introduces a number of subordinative and coordinative arguments to support his previously stated beliefs. The first coordinative argument demonstrates that the investigator is certain of the incident and believes it to be true, and he asks the suspect to confess: "*But we need to deal with reality and our value of it is your credibility.*". The second coordinative argument states that the incident is real and that Rafferty should clarify the situation: "*But there is no other way you don't have any other options.*"

Detective Smyth introduces a subordinative argument to back up his position because he has videos and other evidences. He presses Michael to confess and keeps telling him everything is clear and the only thing he has is his credibility: "*At this stage here all you have is your credibility, because you can acknowledge your side and acknowledge what happened.*" After a lengthy discussion, Michael finally advances a subordinative argument and insists that he is innocent and that he is only involved with bad guys, and that he has nothing to do with the incident: "*The only reason if I am sitting here is because I got involved with bad people.*"

The investigator makes a straightforward declaration in confirmation of Michael's involvement in Tori's murder Using a subordinative argument: "*Because one piece of evidence leads to another.*"

Table 25 explicates the argumentative moves and indicators of this stage

Table 25*The Moves and the Indicators of Argumentation Stage*

The Argumentation stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Investigator: "What cause you to do what you did? What would cause you to get involved in an incident like this?"</i>	Requesting argumentation	Directive
<i>Investigator: "What pushed you to this point? what caused you to do this?"</i>	Requesting argumentation	Directive
The Argumentation Stage	Argumentative Indicators	Type
<i>Investigator: "But we need to deal with reality and our value of it is your credibility."</i>	Coordinative argument	Convincing the suspect to confess
<i>Investigator: "But there is no other way you don't have any other options."</i>	Coordinative argument	Convincing the suspect to confess
<i>Investigator: "At this stage here all you have is your credibility, because you can acknowledge your side and acknowledge what happened"</i>	Subordinative argument	Convincing the suspect to confess
<i>Suspect: "The only reason if I am sitting here is because I got involved with bad people."</i>	Subordinative argument	Denying his involvement
<i>Investigator: "Because one piece of evidence leads to another."</i>	Subordinative argument	To support the detective's standpoints

D. The Concluding Stage

The police officer does not accept the suspect's argument. He has documentation that points to the suspect's involvement in Tori's murder. Detective Smyth believes that Rafferty's argument is unacceptable, and that all of the evidence points to him: *"there is evidence out there compelling evidence*

that links you to this situation." The investigator repeats that Michael's statements are not acceptable utilizing an assertive speech act: *"You have been hanging around with criminal."*

The case is ended without a confession from the suspect, who remains silent until the end of the interrogation. Despite all of the evidence and detective Smyth's efforts to persuade him. The interrogator employs a directive speech act as a clarification request: *"How the hell did you get mixed up in this."* The suspect remains silent.

Table 26 demonstrates the argumentative moves and indicators of this stage.

Table 26

The Moves and the Indicators of the Concluding Stage

The concluding stage	Argumentative Moves	Type of Speech Act
<i>Investigator: "there is evidence out there compelling evidence that links you to this situation."</i>	The standpoint of the suspect is not accepted	Commissive
<i>Suspect : "You have been hanging around with criminal."</i>	Repeating that the standpoint is not accepted.	Assertive
<i>Investigator: "How the hell did you get mixed up in this."</i>	Requesting usage declarative	Directive

4.3 The Quantitative Analysis

Following the qualitative investigation of the data under scrutiny, quantitative analysis is used to confirm the prior analysis of conclusions and to confirm or reject the hypotheses provided in Chapter One.

The section that follows is split into two parts. The first part entails a detailed quantitative study of argumentative indicators in individual police interrogations; the second section introduces the overall analytical findings on the side of the police and the suspects. Part two compares the argumentative

indicators found in American and Canadian police interrogations using the SPSS application. The following formula is used to calculate the frequency and percentage of occurrences for each argumentative indicator:

$$\text{Percentage of occurrence} = \frac{\text{Number of occurrence}}{\text{Total number of strategies or devices}} \times 100$$

Secondly, Chi square is employed to determine whether there are any statistically significant differences between the argumentative indicators used by the American and the Canadian police interrogators and suspects. Then, the overall results are tabulated to include frequencies (henceforth as Fr.) and percentages (henceforth as Pr.). Some tables contain also the computed Chi square values of the argumentative indicators in each stage to be compared. In addition, specific tables are clarified by figures to conceptualize the results more vividly.

4.3.1 The American Sample

This section introduces the quantitative analyses of the American cases.

4.3.1.1 Argumentative Indicators in Case 1

To address the research questions of the current study, the complete findings of argumentative indicators in the cases are displayed using frequencies and percentages.

4.3.1.1.1 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Police

A. The Confrontation Stage

The indicators utilized by the police are shown the in Table 27

Table 27*Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage*

Confrontation Stage								
Proportional Attitude Indicator	Fr.	Pr.	Force Modifying Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Dispute Indicates	Fr.	Pr.
Weak assertive (to express an opinion)	1	3.2%	Weak assertive (to express standpoint)	1	3.2%	Request for clarification	23	74.1%
						Request for justification	6	19.5%
Total			31			100%		

The most frequent argumentative indicators of the confrontation stage are the dispute indicators. A request for clarification occurs 23 times (74.1%). police detectives utilize the dispute indicators (request for clarification) more than request for justification, which occurs 6 times (19.5%) to provide George an opportunity to be comfortable and not to coerce the him during questioning.

Proportional attitude indicators and force modifying expressions are only used once (3.2%) and in weak assertive form. Detective Lisa is being friendly and tries to exclude strong assertives which make her look forceful.

B. The Opening Sage

The argumentative indicators of the opening stage are shown in Table 28

Table 28*Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage*

The Opening Stage	Fr.	Pr.
Challenge to defend standpoint	2	28.5%
An agreement with the other arguer's proposition	5	71.5%
Total	7	100%

The interrogator employs the challenge to defend the arguer's position twice (28.5%) to extract more information and reveal the truth. An agreement with the other arguer's proposition is used 5 times (71.5%). These frequencies demonstrate that the investigator is tactful and does not frequently challenge the defendant, but rather agrees with his claims.

C. The Argumentation Stage

The argumentative indicators of this stage are shown in the Table 29 below.

Table 29

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage

Subordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Coordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Present a reason to support an opinion	6	85.7%	Join an additional argument to support an opinion	1	14.3%
Total			7		100%

Police interrogators deploy a number of arguments to clarify the evidence they possess against the suspect; they utilize these arguments to provide the suspect with proof of the events under inquiry. Table 29 shows that there are a total of 7 argumentative indicators. Subordinative argument is utilized to present a reason to support the detectives' opinions and it occurs 6 times (85.7%). These arguments are employed to motivate George to confess his crime as he keeps denying hitting or harming his girlfriend.

D. The Concluding Stage

The concluding stage indicators are shown in the Table 30 below.

Table 30

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argument Stage

Concluding Stage indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Maintain an opinion	2	100%
Total	2	100%

As shown in Table 30, the investigators maintain their opinion at the concluding stage and they reject George standpoint. Both interrogators have suspicions, but George refuses to admit the girl's death.

4.3.1.1.2 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Suspect

A. The Confrontation Stage

The argumentative indicators of this stage are shown in Table 31 below.

Table 31

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators of Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage								
Proportional Attitude Indicator	Fr.	Pr.	Force Modifying Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Dispute Indicates	Fr.	Pr.
Weak assertives	6	22%	Weak assertives	2	7.6%	Dispute indicators	4	14.8%
Strong assertives	3	11%	Strong assertives	12	44.6%			
Total			27			100%		

Strong assertive is the most frequent indicator used by George. It is used 15 times (55.6%). He appears to be certain of his innocence, and he is unaware that

Love has died, thus his statements are emphatic. The least frequent indicator is dispute indicator which occurs 4 times (14.8%). This shows that George wants to express his innocence rather than be in disagreement with the police.

B. The Opening Sage

The argumentative indicators of the opening stage are shown in Table 32.

Table 32

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	Fr.	Pr.
Denying the other arguer's proposition	4	66.6%
Implicit acceptance of the burden of proof	2	33.4%
Total	6	100%

George implicitly accepts the burden of proof by answering the questions directed to him by the police. At the same time, he utilizes the denying argumentative indicators only. Denying the other arguer's proposition is the only explicit indicator used by the suspect as he employs it 4 times (66.6%). Huguely accepts the burden of proof and is cooperative in answering almost all of the questions directed to him by detective Lisa and the other interrogator; however, at the end of the interrogation, detective Lisa tells him that Love is dead and he is the one who killed her. When this has happened, he denies knowing anything about the victim's death and preserved this position until the final moment of the interrogation.

C. The Argumentation Stage

The argumentative indicators of this stage are shown in the Table 33.

Table 33

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage

Subordinative indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Coordinative indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Present a reason to support an opinion	6	54.5%	Join an additional argument to support an opinion	5	45.5%
Total			11		100%

George utilizes the subordinative indicators 6 times (54.5%) to present a reason and to support an opinion. He provides a series of arguments to back up his position as being innocent. He also joins additional arguments to support his opinion.

D. The Concluding Stage

The concluding stage indicators are shown in the table below.

Table 34

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage

Concluding Stage indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Non-acceptance of pervious assertion	5	100%
Total	5	100%

Huguely maintains his position and does not accept the police viewpoint. He totally rejects the idea of the victim's death. Hence, the only argumentative indicator used by him is non-acceptance of the arguers' standpoint.

4.3.1.2 Argumentative Indicators in Case 2

4.3.1.2.1 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Police

A. The Confrontation Stage

The indicators utilized by the police are demonstrated in Table 35.

Table 35

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage								
Proportional Attitude Indicator	Fr.	Pr.	Force Modifying Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Dispute Indicates	Fr.	Pr.
Weak assertive	5	29.6%	--	0	0%	Show doubt	2	11.7%
Semi-assertives	2	11.7%				Request for clarification	8	47%
Total			17			100%		

The most frequent indicator used by Detective Royce is the request for clarification which occurs 8 times (47%). Weak assertive is utilized 5 times (29.4%). The least frequent indicators are Semi-assertives and dispute indicators. Both occur only one time (11.7%). This demonstrates that the investigator provides the suspect with the opportunity to confess. He does not utilize requests for justification or strong assertions, but rather weak assertions to inform the suspect that the investigator is not certain and would want to hear the events from Greenwell himself.

B. The Opening Sage

The argumentative indicators of the opening stage are explicated in Table 36.

Table 36

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	Fr.	Pr.
--------------------------	------------	------------

Challenge to defend standpoint	1	33.4%
An agreement with the other arguer's proposition	2	66.6%
Total	3	100%

The interrogator employs the challenge to defend the arguer's position once (33.4%) to force Greenwell to defend his position. An agreement with the other arguer's proposition is used twice (66.6%). These frequencies demonstrate that detective Royce is being diplomatic and does not often challenge Greenwell, but rather agrees with his allegations.

C. The Argumentation Stage

The argumentative indicators of this stage are shown in the table below.

Table 37

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage

Subordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Coordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Present a reason to support an opinion	4	26.6%	Join an additional argument to support an opinion	11	73.4%
Total			15		100%

Detective Royce employs a number of arguments to clarify the evidence he possesses against the suspect. He uses these arguments to convince Greenwell that the police have quite enough details of the incident and that he should confess. Detective Royce utilizes the subordinative argument 4 times (26.6%) and the coordinative argument 11 times (73.4%). These frequencies show that the investigator employs rational persuasion using reasoned argumentation to extract accurate information from the respondent.

D. The Concluding Stage

The concluding stage indicators are shown in the table below.

Table 38

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage

Concluding Stage Indicators	Fr.	Pr.
The investigator removes his suspicion of the arguer's standpoint	1	100%
Total	1	100%

As shown in Table 38, Detective Royce removes his suspicions of the suspect viewpoint as the suspect has confessed. No other argumentative indicators are used because both parties agree on the settlement of the incident.

4.3.1.2.2 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Suspect

A. The Confrontation Stage

The argumentative indicators of this stage are shown in the table below

Table 39

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage								
Proportional Attitude Indicator	Fr.	Pr.	Force Modifying Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Dispute Indicates	Fr.	Pr.
Weak assertives	4	30.7%	---	0	0%	Dispute indicators	4	30.7%
Strong assertives	1	6.9%						
Semi-assertive	4	30.7%						
Total			13			100%		

Weak assertives, dispute indicators, and semi-assertives are used 4 times (30.7%). Strong assertive is used once (6.9%). This indicates that Greenwell's statements are unstable. He uses weak assertives at the start of the interrogation, then switches to semi-assertive statements, and then enters into a disagreement with Officer Royce, denying the events. Strong assertive is used to describe an ordinary event.

B. The Opening Sage

The argumentative indicators of the opening stage are shown in Table 40.

Table 40

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	Fr.	Pr.
Denying the other arguer's proposition	2	33.4%
Implicit acceptance of the burden of proof	1	16.6%
The suspect's agreement with the other arguer's proposition	3	50%
Total	6	100%

Greenwell accepts the burden of proof by answering the questions directed to him. Denying the other arguer's proposition is utilized at the beginning of the opening stage. The argumentative indicators of denying the other arguer's proposition are used 2 times (33.3%). The agreement with the other arguer's proposition indicator is utilized 3 times (50%) because the suspect denies at first, then confesses.

C. The Argumentation Stage

The argumentative indicators of this stage are shown in the table below

Table 41

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators of Argumentation Stage

Subordinative indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Coordinative indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Present a reason to support an opinion	7	54.5%	Join an additional argument to support an opinion	1	45.5%
Total			8		100%

The suspect utilizes the subordinative indicators 6 times (54.5%) to present a reason to support his standpoints and to assure his innocence. And he joins additional arguments to clarify his viewpoints.

D. The Concluding Stage

The concluding stage indicators are shown in Table 42.

Table 42

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage

Concluding Stage indicators	Fr.	Pr.
The suspect accepts the police's proposition.	3	100%
Total	3	100%

One type of concluding stage indicator is used, which is the acceptance of the other arguer's proposition. This indicator is utilized 3 times (100%) because Greenwell agrees with the police's standpoint and establishes the end of the discussion.

4.3.2 The Canadian Sample

This section discusses the individual analysis of the Canadian cases.

4.3.2.1 Argumentative Indicators in Case 3

The frequencies and the percentages of the third case are explained in this section.

4.3.2.1.1 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Police

A. The Confrontation Stage

The indicators utilized by the police are shown the in the table below.

Table 43

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage								
Proportiona l Attitude Indicator	Fr.	Pr.	Force Modifying Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Dispute Indicates	Fr.	Pr.
Weak assertive	3	20%	Weak assertive	3	20%	Show doubt	1	6.7%
			Strong assertive	1	6.7%	Request for clarification	7	46.6%
Total			15			100%		

The most frequent indicator used by detective Smyth is the request for clarification which occurs 7 times (46.6%). Weak assertive is utilized 6 times (40%). The least frequent indicators are strong assertives and dispute indicators. Both occur only one time (6.7%). This demonstrates that the investigator leaves the suspect a space and does not make judgmental statements. He does not utilize requests for justification or strong assertions, but rather weak assertions which is a persuasive strategy to make it clear to Russell that the truth about the occurrence should be heard from the suspect's perspective.

B. The Opening Sage

The argumentative indicators of the opening stage are shown in Table 44.

Table 44

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	Fr.	Pr.
Challenge to defend standpoint	8	18.2%
An agreement with the other arguer's proposition	36	81.8%
Total	44	100%

Detective Smyth employs the challenge to defend the arguer's proposition 8 times (18.2 %) to extract information and reveal the truth. An agreement with the other arguer's proposition is used 36 times (81.8%). These frequencies demonstrate that detective Smyth is quite professional because the accused is a colonel in the Canadian army, thus he desires to have a professional polite discussion with him.

C. The Argumentation Stage

The argumentative indicators of this stage are shown in the table below.

Table 45

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage

Subordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Coordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Present a reason to support an opinion	4	44.5%	Join an additional argument to support an opinion	5	55.5%
Total			9		100%

Detective Smyth employs several arguments to back up his proportions. He utilizes the subordinative argument 4 times (44.5%) and the coordinative argument 5 times (55.5%). These frequencies show that the investigator

employs purposeful argumentation in persuasion to elicit accurate information from the participant.

D. The Concluding Stage

The concluding stage indicators are shown in Table 46.

Table 46

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage

Concluding Stage Indicators	Fr.	Pr.
The investigator removes his suspicion of the arguer's standpoint	4	100%
Total		4

As shown in Table 46, the investigator removes his suspicions of the suspect's viewpoint as the suspect has confessed. No other argumentative indicators are used because Russell withdraws his insistent on denial and confesses the incidents.

4.3.2.1.2 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Suspect

A. The Confrontation Stage

The argumentative indicators of this stage are shown in the table below.

Table 47

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage								
Proportional Attitude Indicator	Fr.	Pr.	Force Modifying Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Dispute Indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Weak assertives	4	36.4%	Weak assertives	3	27.2%	Dispute indicators	1	9%
Semi-assertive	1	9%	Strong assertive	2	18.4%			
Total			11			100%		

Weak assertives are the most frequent indicators. They are used 7 times (63.6%). The suspect employs weak assertives, because he does not provide comprehensive responses. He simply desires for the conversation to proceed as smoothly as possible. First, he offers a shaky claim about the location of the occurrence. He is positive of the place, but he wants to state unequivocally that he is not. Russell responds to each question from detective sergeant Smyth with a series of weak assertives. Williams makes another confused statement to explain why he left his home in Tweed. Dispute indicator is utilized only once (9%) because Russell does not want to get in a disagreement with detective Smyth.

B. The Opening Sage

The argumentative indicators of the opening stage are demonstrated in Table 48.

Table 48

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in the Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	Fr.	Pr.
Denying the other arguer's proposition	1	8.4%
Implicit acceptance of the burden of proof	8	66.6%
The suspect's agreement with the other arguer's proposition	3	25%
Total	12	100%

Acceptance of the burden of proof is the most frequent argumentative indicator. It occurs 8 times (66.6%). Russell attempts to be persuasive; he accepts the burden of proof to defend his position. Denying the other arguer's proposition is utilized at the beginning of the opening stage. The argumentative indicator of denying the other arguer's proposition is used once (8.4%). The agreement with the other arguer's proposition indicator is utilized 3 times (25%). Russell decides to withdraw his standpoint as detective Smyth persuades him to reveal the events of the incident.

C. The Argumentation Stage

The argumentative indicators of this stage are shown in the table below

Table 49

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage

Subordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Coordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Present a reason to support an opinion	6	85.7	Join an additional argument to support an opinion	1	14.3
Total			7		100%

Williams utilizes the subordinative indicators 6 times (85.7%). He has quite a good number of arguments to defend himself. Russell provides these arguments to give detective Smyth evidences of his honesty.

D. The Concluding Stage

The concluding stage indicators are shown in the table below

Table 50

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage

Concluding Stage indicators	Fr.	Pr.
The suspect accepts the police's proposition.	4	100%
Total	4	100%

Russell confesses his crimes after a long interrogation. At this point, the defendant admits all his crimes. Exposing the suspect's body implies that he has confessed guilt. He requests another map to show the investigator the precise location of Jessica's body.

4.3.2.2 Argumentative Indicators in Case 4

The frequencies and the percentages of case four are discussed in this section.

4.3.2.2.1 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Police

A. The Confrontation Stage

The indicators utilized by the police are shown the in the table below.

Table 51

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage								
Proportional Attitude Indicator	Fr.	Pr.	Force Modifying Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Dispute Indicates	Fr.	Pr.
Weak assertive	13	50%	Weak assertive	1	3.8%	Request for justification	1	3.8%
Strong assertive	2	7.7%						
Semi-assertive	5	19.2%						
Total			26			100%		

The most frequent indicator used by the police is weak assertive. It is used 14 times (53.8%). Strong assertive is utilized 6 times (22.9%). Semi-assertive occurs 5 times (19.2%). The least frequent indicator is request for justification. It is utilized only once (3.8%). The investigator employs weak statements to express his opinion about the suspect. He does not want to force his opinion on him. He does not utilize requests for clarification or strong assertions, but rather weak assertions because Rafferty remains almost silent during the interrogation. Detective Smyth utilizes a weak statement to give Rafferty a chance to explain facts; the interrogator seeks to get words out of the accused's mouth.

B. The Opening Sage

The argumentative indicators of the opening stage are shown in Table 52.

Table 52

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	Fr.	Pr.
Challenge to defend standpoint	7	100%
Total	7	

As shown in Table 52, Detective Smyth challenges the suspect 7 times (100%) to defend himself and justify the charges against him. No other argumentative indicators are used as the suspect keeps silent and refused to confess.

C. The Argumentation Stage

The argumentative indicators of this stage are shown in the table below.

Table 53

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argument Stage

Subordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Coordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Present a reason to support an opinion	33	76.7%	Join an additional argument to support an opinion	10	23.3%
Total			43		100%

Detective Smyth gives various arguments to prop his standpoints. He utilizes the subordinative argument 33 times (76.7%) and the coordinative argument 10 times (23.3%). The investigator gives a lot of arguments in this case because Michael refuses to talk and denies his guilt.

D. The Concluding Stage

The concluding stage indicators are shown in the table below.

Table 54

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage

Concluding Stage indicators	Fr.	Pr.
The investigator maintains his opinion	3	100%
Total	3	100%

Detective Smyth sticks to his beliefs because he has a great deal of evidence.

4.3.2.2.2 Argumentative Indicators Used by the Suspect

A. The Confrontation Stage

The argumentative indicators of this stage are shown in the table below.

Table 55

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage								
Proportional Attitude Indicator	Fr.	Pr.	Force Modifying Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Dispute Indicates	Fr.	Pr.
---	0		---	0		Show doubt	1	100%
Total			1			100%		

The suspect uses only one argumentative indicator as he remains silent almost in the entire interrogation. Dispute indicator occurred only once (100%) as the suspect insists on denying his involvement in the crime till the end of the interrogation.

B. The Opening Sage

No argumentative indicator is utilized at this stage as the suspect refused to talk.

C. The Argumentation Stage

The argumentative indicators of this stage are shown in the table below.

Table 56

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators of Argument Stage

Subordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Coordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Present a reason to support an opinion	1	100%	Join an additional argument to support an opinion	0	0
Total			1		

The suspect utilizes the subordinative indicator 1 time (100%) to present a reason to support an opinion then, he remains mute.

D. The Concluding Stage

There are no indicators found at this stage since the suspect is persistent and refuses to confess till the last moment.

4.4 The Overall Analysis of the Data

This section introduces the overall analysis of the American and the Canadian sections.

4.4.1 The Argumentative Indicators Used by the American Police

A. Confrontation Stage

Table 57

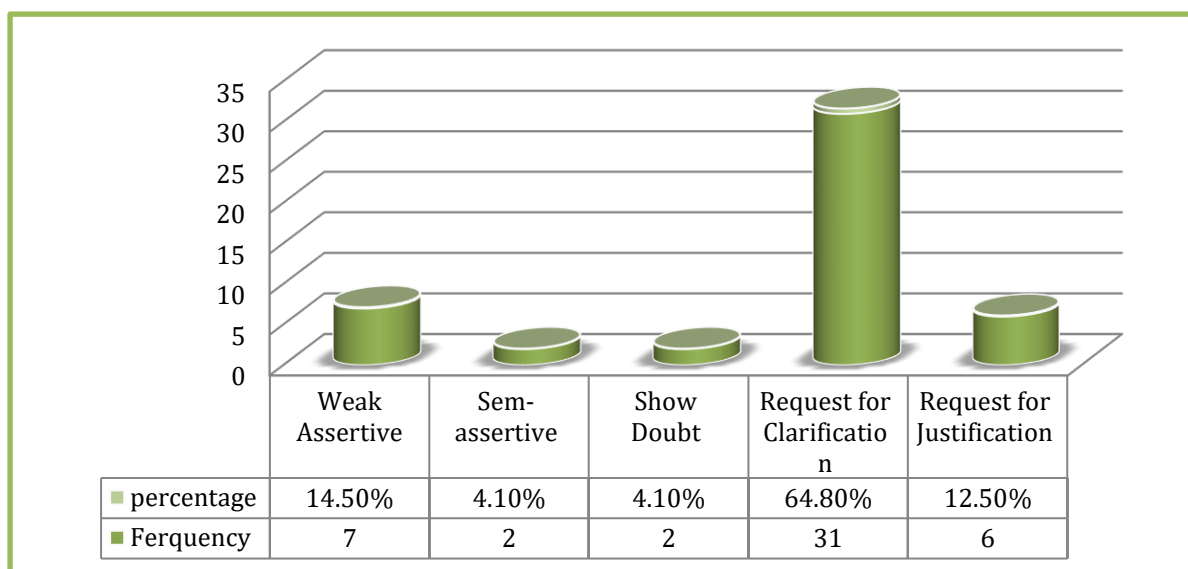
Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage								
Proportional Attitude Indicator	Fr.	Pr.	Force Modifying Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Dispute Indicates	Fr.	Pr.
Weak assertive	6	12.5%	Weak assertive	1	2%	Show doubt	2	4.1%

Strong assertive	0	0				Request for clarification	31	64.5%
Semi-assertive	2	4.1%	Strong assertive	0	0	Request for justification	6	12.5%
Total			48				100%	

Figure 2

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage



The most frequent argumentative indicators of the confrontation stage are the dispute indicators. A request for clarification occurred 31 times (64.8%). American police detectives utilize the dispute indicators, request for clarification, more than requests for justification, which occurred 6 times (12.5%) to provide the suspect an opportunity to be comfortable and not to coerce the suspect during questioning.

Proportional attitude indicators and force modifying expressions are only used 7 times (14.5%) and in weak assertive forms. The American investigator is being friendly and tries to exclude strong assertives which makes him sound forceful.

B. The Opening Stage

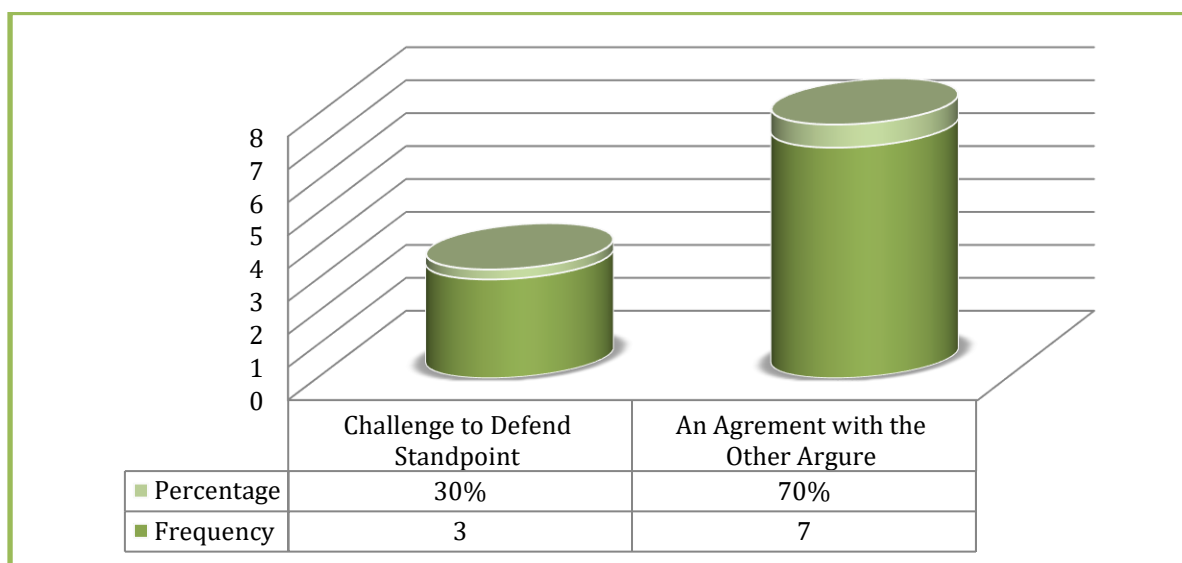
Table 58

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	Fr.	Pr.
Challenge to defend standpoint	3	30%
An agreement with the other arguer's proposition	7	70%
Total	10	

Figure 3

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage



The American interrogators employ the challenge to defend the arguer's position three times (30%) to extract more information and reveal the truth. An agreement with the other arguer's proposition is used 7 times (70%). These frequencies demonstrate that American investigators are tactful and do not much challenge the defendant, but rather agree with his claims.

C. The Argumentation Stage

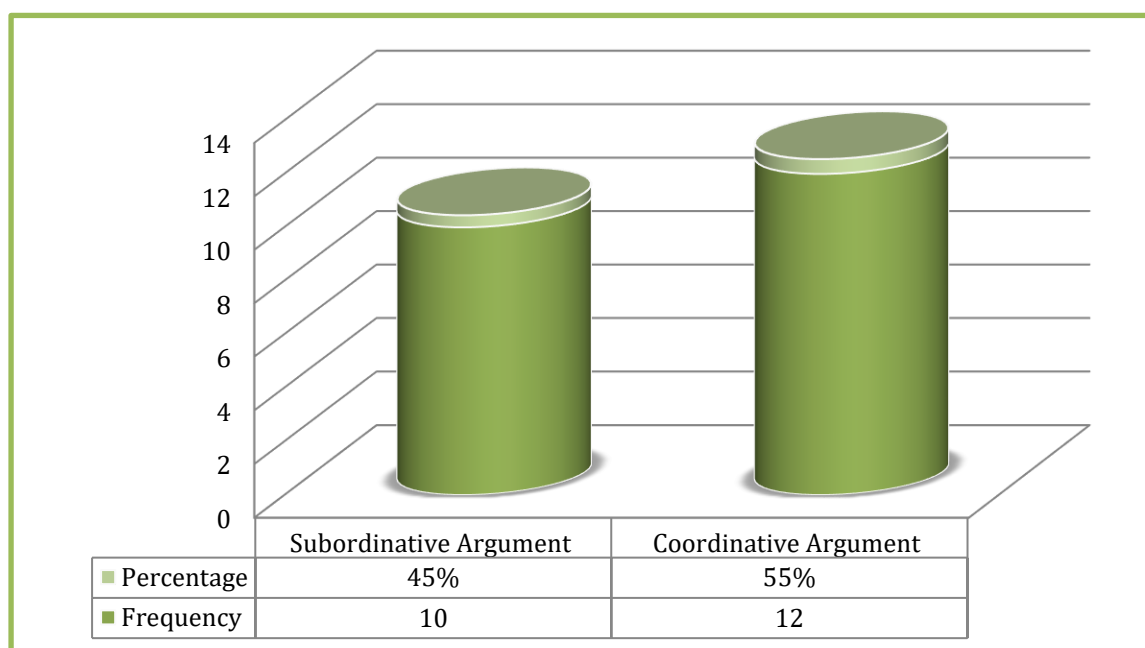
Table 59

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage

Subordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Coordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Present a reason to support an opinion	10	45%	Join an additional argument to support an opinion	12	55%
Total			22		100%

Figure 4

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage



Police deploy a number of arguments to clarify the evidence they possess against the suspect. They utilize these arguments to provide the suspect with proof on the occurrence under inquiry. Subordinative argument is utilized to present a reason to support the detectives' opinions and it occurs 10 times (45.4%). Coordinative argumentative indicators are utilized 12 times (54.5%). These arguments motivate the suspects to confess.

D. The Concluding Stage

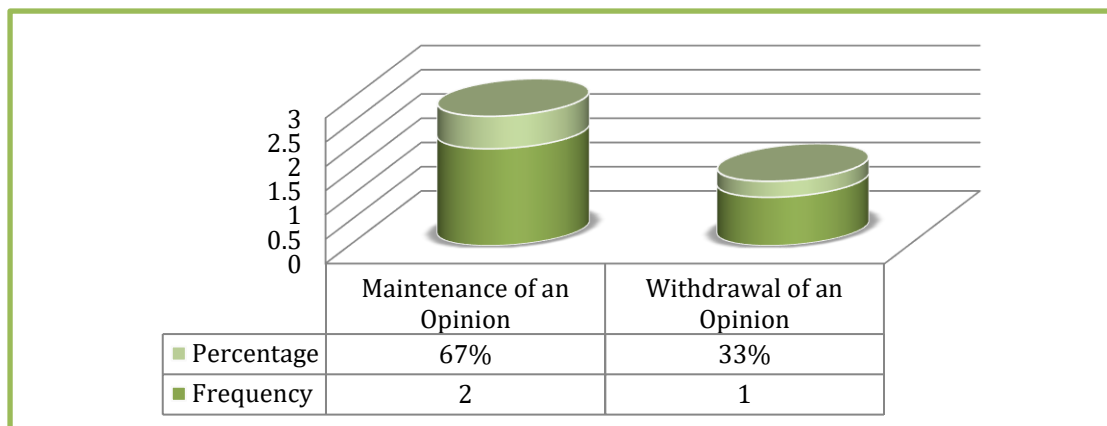
Table 60

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage

Concluding Stage indicators	Fr.	Pr.
The investigator maintains his opinion	2	66.6%
The investigator removes his suspicion	1	33.3%
Total		3

Figure 5

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage



American interrogators maintain their position at the end of the discussion more than withdrawing their standpoints. As it is shown in Table 60, the argumentative indicator of maintenance is utilized 2 times (66.6%).

4.4.2 The Argumentative Indicators Used by the American Suspects

A. The Confrontation Stage

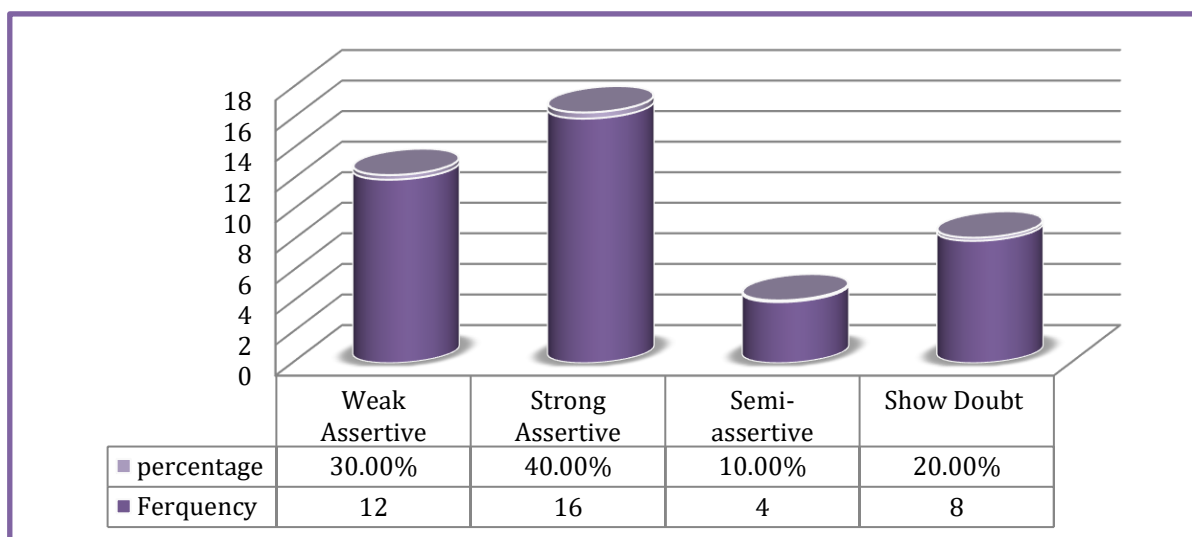
Table 61

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage								
Proportional Attitude Indicator	Fr.	Pr.	Force Modifying Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Dispute Indicates	Fr.	Pr.
Weak assertive	10	25%	Weak assertive	2	5%	Show doubt	8	20%
Strong assertive	4	10%						
Semi-assertive	4	10%	Strong assertive	12	30%			
Total			40				100%	

Figure 6

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage



Strong assertive is the most frequent indicator used by the suspect. They are used 16 times (40%). The least frequent indicator is semi-assertive, it is utilized 4 times (10%). This shows that the suspect wants to assert his innocence rather than be in disagreement with the police. Both strong and weak assertives are utilized to express an opinion. American suspects express their opinions with strong expressions more than with weak assertion. This shows that they are stubborn and try to disguise the truth. Weak assertives are utilized 12 times (30%) and this indicates their hesitation and their untruthful statements.

B. The Opening Stage

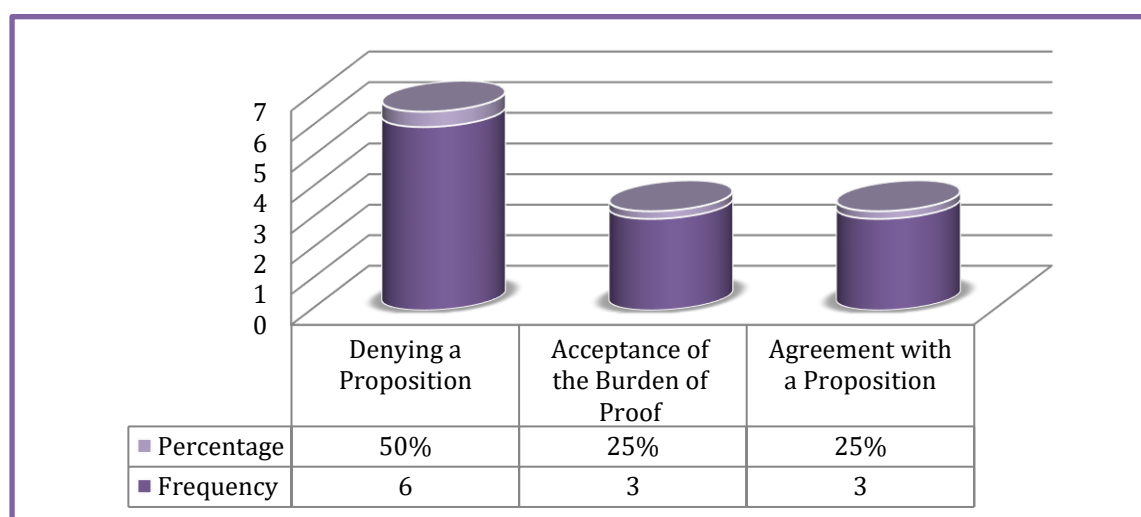
Table 62

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

The Opening Stage	Fr.	Pr.
Denying the other arguer's proposition	6	50%
Implicit acceptance of the burden of proof	3	25%
The suspect's agreement with the other arguer's proposition	3	25%
Total	12	100%

Figure 7

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage



American suspects use denying the police proposition 6 times (50%). The suspect's agreement with the police is utilized 3 times (25%). These frequencies show that the suspect always denies the standpoint being introduced by the police. The suspect acceptance of the burden of proof, which is used 3 times (25%) shows their cooperation during interrogation.

C. The Argumentation Stage

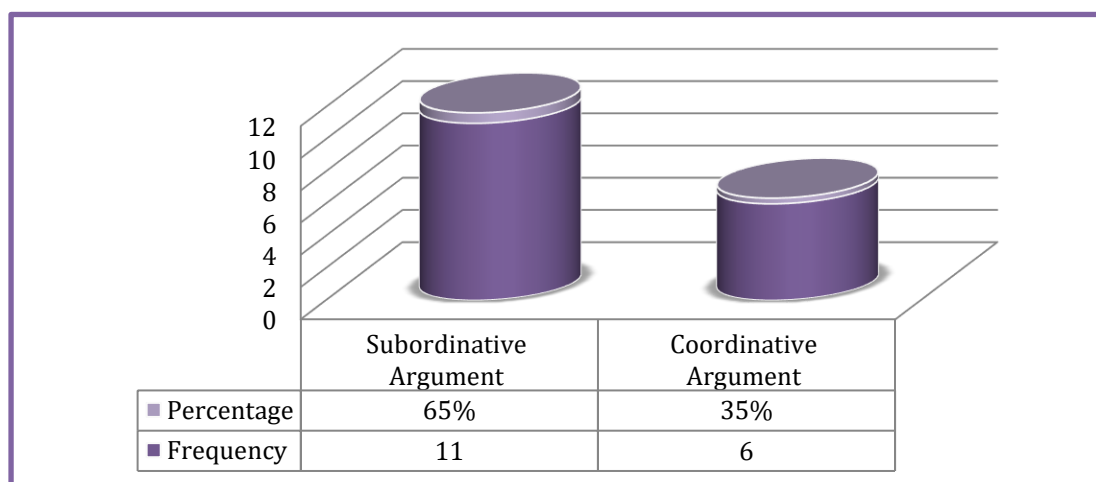
Table 63

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage

Subordinative indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Coordinative indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Present a reason to support an opinion	11	65%	Join an additional argument to support an opinion	6	35%
Total			17		100%

Figure 8

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage



American suspects utilize the subordinative indicators 11 times (65%) to present a reason to support an opinion. On top of that, they join additional arguments to support their opinion. Suspects employ these rational reasoning to prop their viewpoints.

D. The Concluding Stage

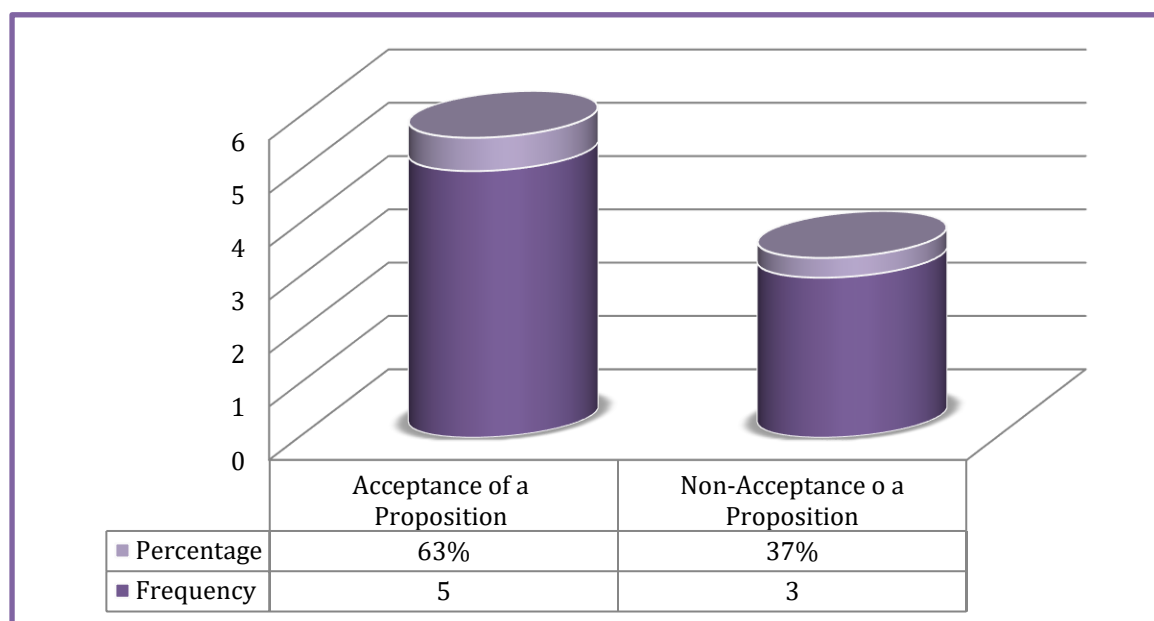
Table 64

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in the Concluding Stage

Concluding Stage Indicators	Fr.	Pr.
The suspect accepts the police's proposition.	5	63%
The suspect does not accept the police's proposition.	3	37%
Total	8	100%

Figure 9

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in the Concluding Stage



American suspects withdraw their standpoints 5 times (63%). Suspects maintain their standpoints 3 times (37%). These results show that American police resolve the interrogation to their advantage.

4.4.2 The Argumentative Indicators Used by the Canadian Police

A. Confrontation Stage

Table 65

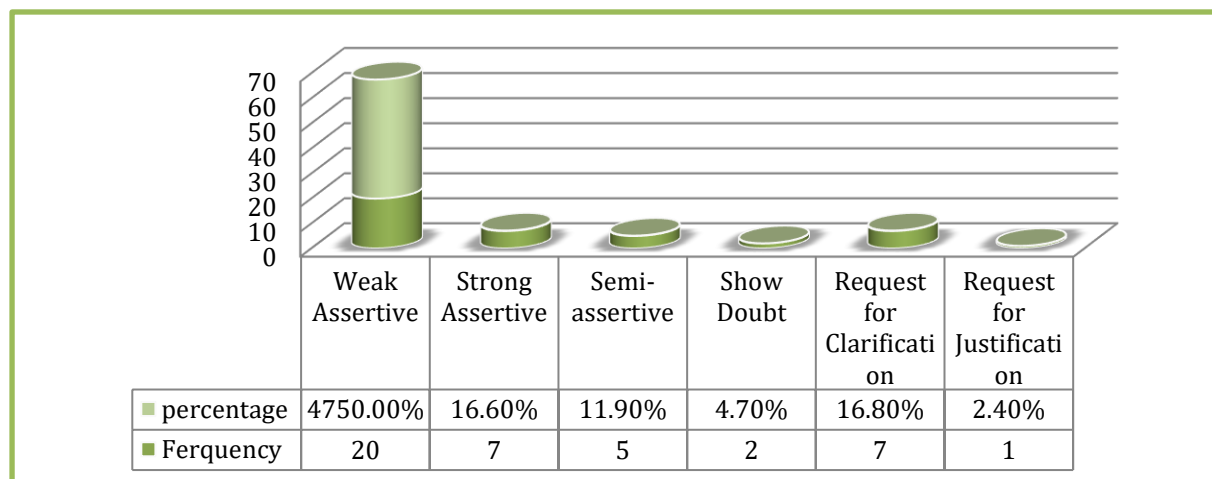
Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage								
Proportional Attitude Indicator	Fr.	Pr.	Force Modifying Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Dispute Indicates	Fr.	Pr.
Weak assertive	16	38%	Weak assertive	4	9.5%	Show doubt	2	4.7%
Strong assertive	2	4.7%				Request for clarification	7	16.8%
Semi-assertive	5	11.9%	Strong assertive	5	11.9%	Request for	1	2.4%

						justification		
Total			42				100%	

Figure 10

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage



The most frequent indicator used by the Canadian police is the weak assertive which occurs 20 times (47.5%). Request for justification is the least frequent indicator. This demonstrates that the investigator provides the suspect opportunity to confess. The Canadian detective uses weak comments rather than demands for justification or strong statements, which is a convincing tactic to explain to the suspect that he is not certain and would want to hear the happenings from the suspect side.

B. The Opening Stage

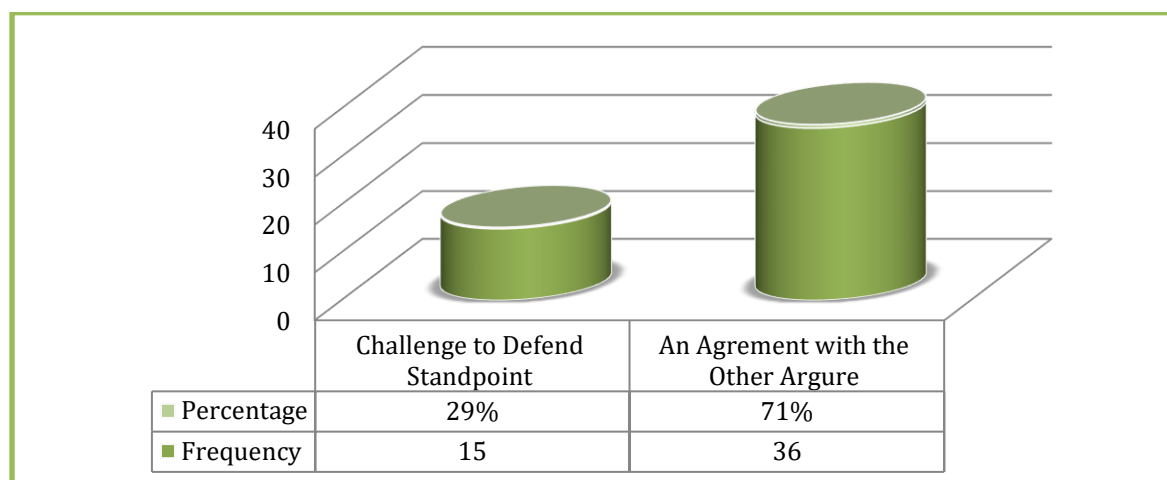
Table 66

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	Fr.	Pr.
Challenge to defend standpoint	15	29%
An agreement with the other arguer's proposition	36	71%
Total	51	

Figure 11

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage



The interrogator employs the challenge to defend the arguer's proposition 15 times (29%) to extract information and reveal the truth. An agreement with the other arguer's proposition is used 36 times (71%). These frequencies show that the investigator is sophisticated and does not usually contest the accused's assertions, but rather agrees with them.

C. The Argumentation Stage

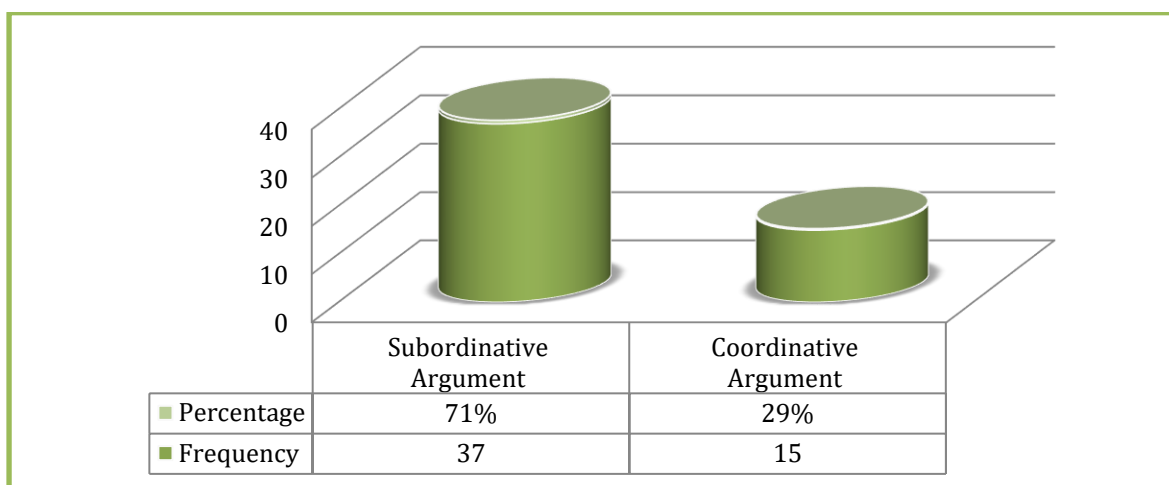
Table 67

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage

Subordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Coordinative Indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Present a reason to support an opinion	37	71.%	Join an additional argument to support an opinion	15	29%
Total			52		100%

Figure 12

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage



The Canadian investigator employs a number of arguments to support his proportions. He utilizes the subordinative argument 37 times (71%) and the coordinative argument 15 times (29%). These frequencies demonstrate that the investigator uses intelligent arguments and logical persuasion to elicit reliable information from the suspects.

D. The Concluding Stage

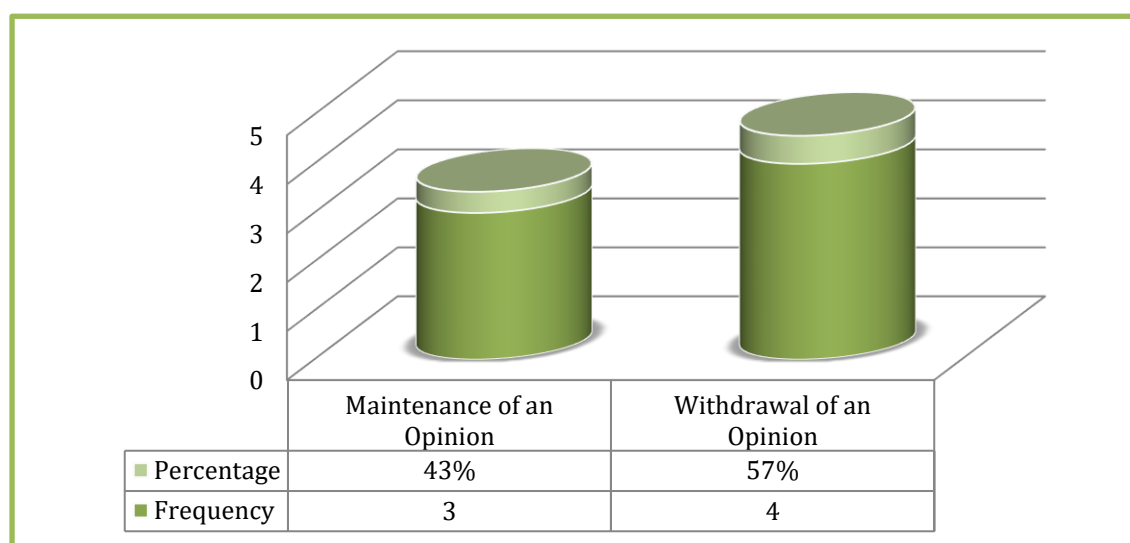
Table 68

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage

Concluding Stage indicators	Fr.	Pr.
The investigator maintains his opinion	3	43%
The investigator removes his suspicion	4	57.%
Total	7	100%

Figure 13

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage



Canadian interrogator maintains his position at the end of the discussion less than withdrawing his standpoints. As it is shown in Table 65, the argumentative indicator of maintenance is utilized 3 times (42.8%) whereas, the withdrawal indicator is used 4 times (57%).

4.4.4 The Argumentative Indicators Used by the Canadian Suspects

A. The Confrontation Stage

Table 69

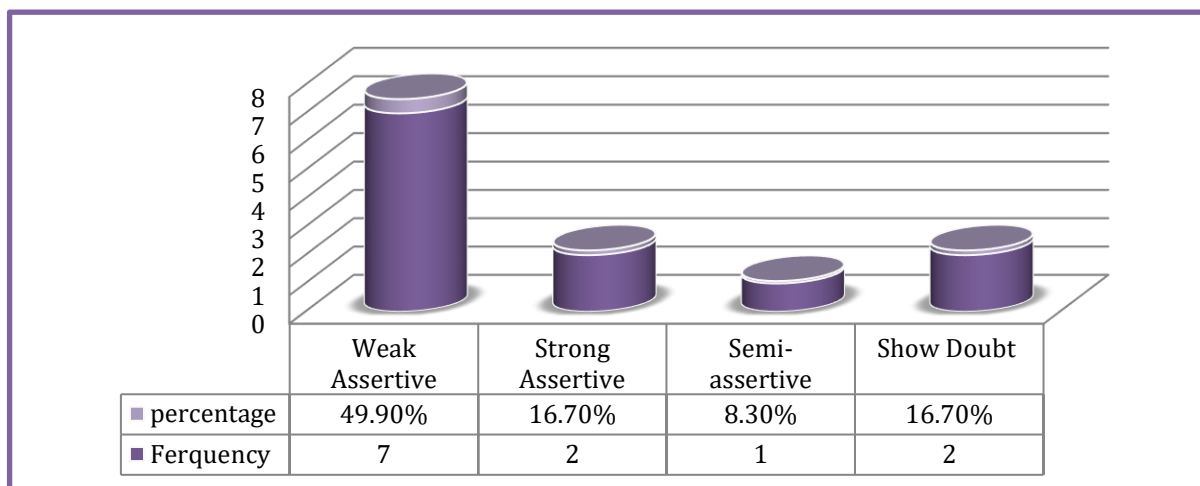
Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage								
Proportional Attitude Indicator	Fr.	Pr.	Force Modifying Indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Dispute Indicates	Fr.	Pr.

Strong assertive	0							
			Strong assertive	2	16.7%			
Semi-assertive	1	8.3%						
Total			12			100%		

Figure 14

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Confrontation Stage



Weak assertives are the most frequent indicators. They are used 7 times (49.9%). Dispute indicators are utilized 2 times (16.7%). This suggests that Canadian suspects are more concerned with expressing their opinions than with demonstrating their disagreement with the interrogator.

B. The Opening Stage

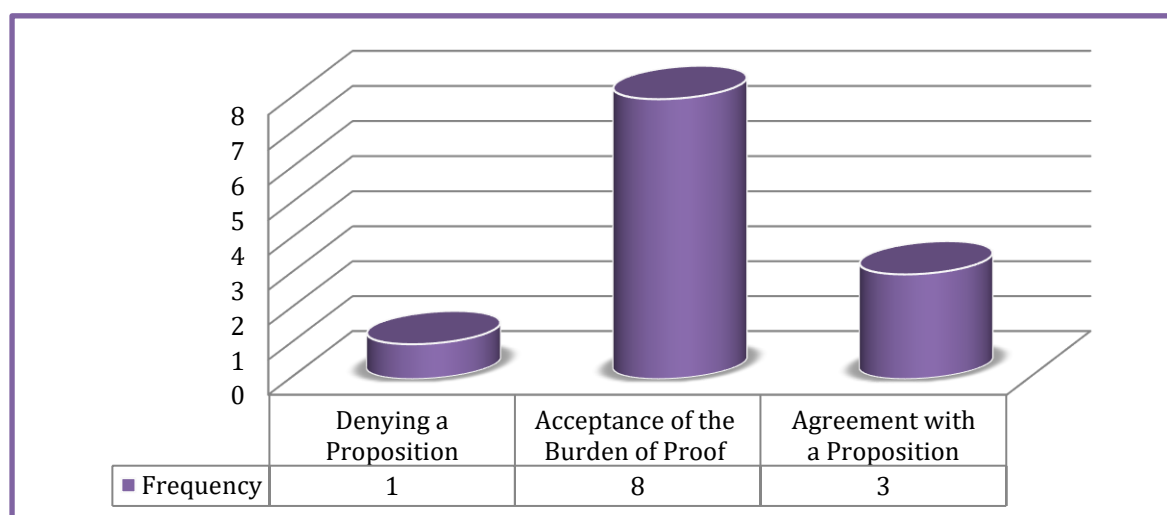
Table 70

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	Fr.	Pr.
Denying the other arguer's proposition	1	8%
Implicit acceptance of the burden of proof	8	67%
The suspect's agreement with the other arguer's proposition	3	25%
Total	12	100%

Figure 15

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Opening



Canadian suspects employ the acceptance of the burden of proof indicator 8 times (67%). Denying the other arguer's proposition is used once (8%). These results show that Canadian suspects accept the burden of defending their position and hide the real events. The suspects do not deny the police's proposition but rather defend their own proposition.

C. The Argumentation Stage

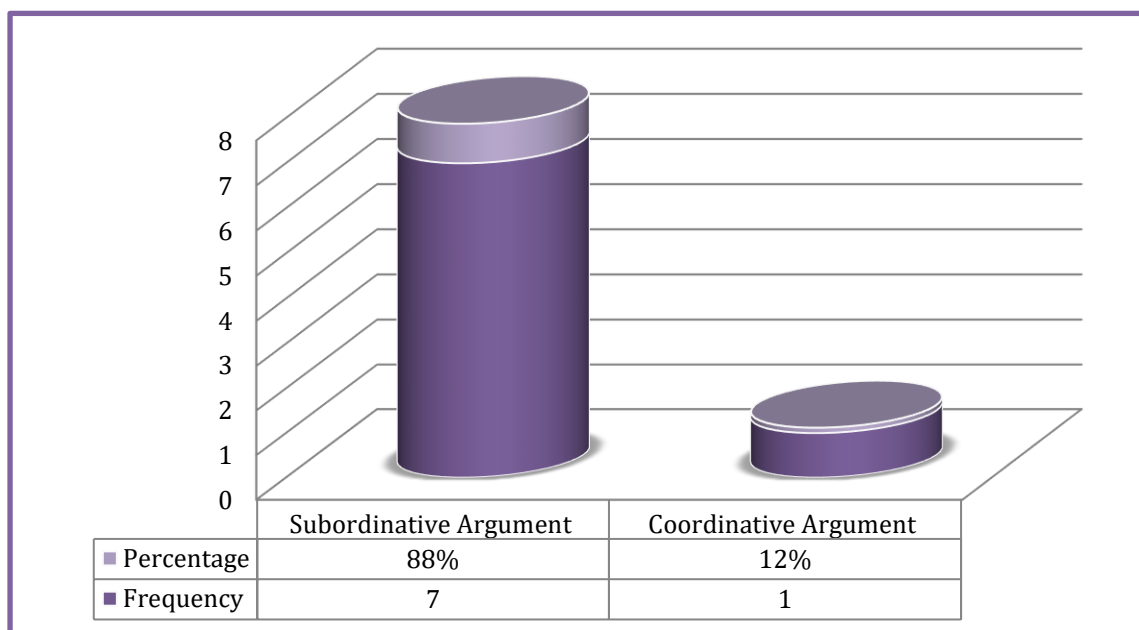
Table 71

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage

Subordinative indicators	Fr.	Pr.	Coordinative indicators	Fr.	Pr.
Present a reason to support an opinion	7	88%	Join an additional argument to support an opinion	1	12%
Total			8		100%

Figure 16

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Argumentation Stage



Canadian suspects utilize the subordinative indicators 7 times (88%) to present a reason to support an opinion. And they join additional arguments to support their opinion. These numbers of arguments imply that Canadian suspects are argumentative and capable of defending themselves.

D. The Concluding Stage

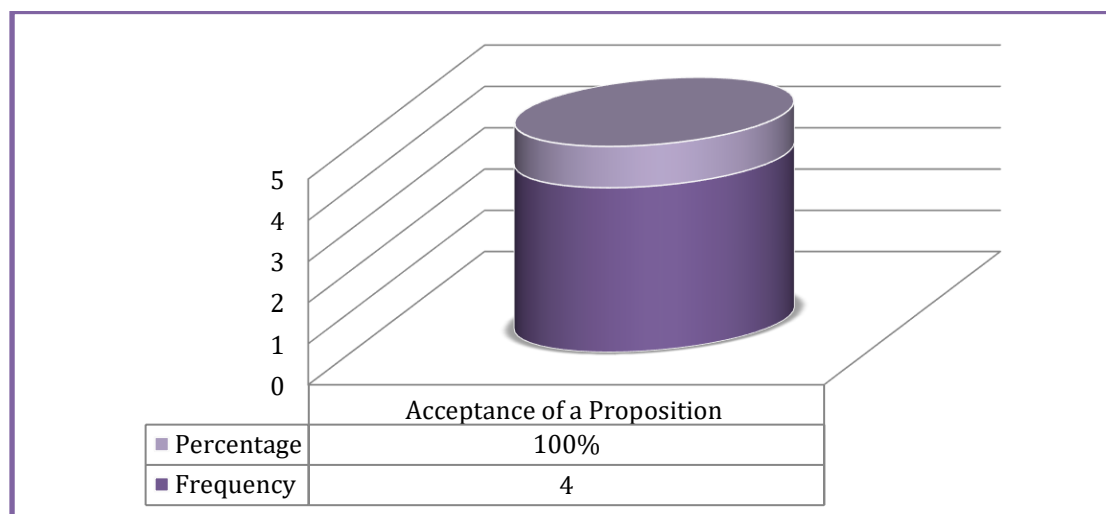
Table 72

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in the Concluding Stage

Concluding Stage indicators	Fr.	Pr.
The suspect accepts the police's proposition.	4	100%
Total		4

Figure 17

Frequencies and Percentages of the Indicators in Concluding Stage



The only argumentative indicator used by the Canadian suspects is the acceptance of the police's proposition, because both cases are resolved to the advantage of the police standpoints.

4.5 Comparison Between American and Canadian Interrogations

This section compares between American and Canadian interrogations in using argumentative indicators. It displays the result of the statistics by applying Chi-square.

4.5.1 American vs. Canadian Police

A comparison between the American and Canadian police is explained in this section.

A. The Confrontation Stage

Table 73

Chi-square for the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage Indicators	American	Canadian	Chi-Square	Statistical Significance	Significance
Proportional Attitude	8	23	7,258	<.001	Yes
Force Modifying	1	9	6,4	<.001	Yes
Dispute Indicators	39	10	17,163	<.001	Yes

Figure 18

Chi-square for the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

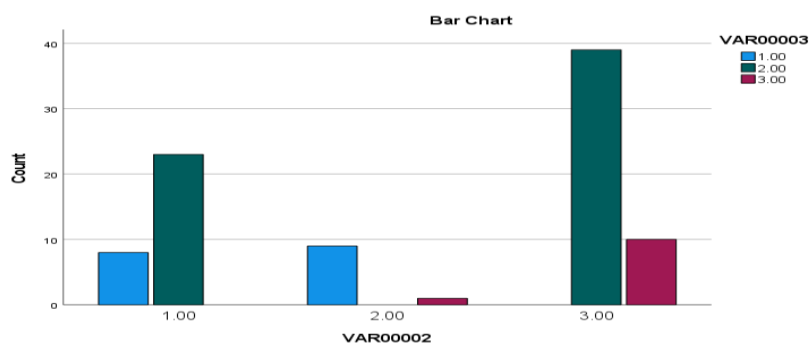


Figure 18 illustrates that there is a statistically significant difference in the use of argumentative indicators of the confrontation stage by American and Canadian police. Canadian police employ proportional attitude indicators more than American officers because they offer their ideas about the incident, provide new perspectives, talk as being nice to the suspects, and not too demanding.

There is also a statistically significant variation in the employment of force-modifying expressions. Canadian detectives employ more of these indicators as they are far more talkative and attempt to persuade the suspect into confessing more gradually. Force modifying expressions convey to the suspect that the investigators are speaking comfortably with them and do not merely want to terminate the interrogation by direct requests for clarification or justification.

The Chi-square for dispute indicators reveals that American interrogators utilize dispute indicators more than Canadian police because they desire direct information from the defendant. They are more particular and demanding. In the American interrogations, suspects respond to direct requests for information, whether these requests are for clarifications or justifications.

B. The Opening Stage

Table 74

Chi-square for the Indicators in Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	American Police	Canadian Police	Chi-square	Significance Statistical	Significance
Challenge to defend a standpoint	3	15	8	<.001	Yes
An agreement with the other arguer's proposition	7	36	19,558	<.001	Yes

Figure 19

Chi-square for the Indicators in Opening Stage

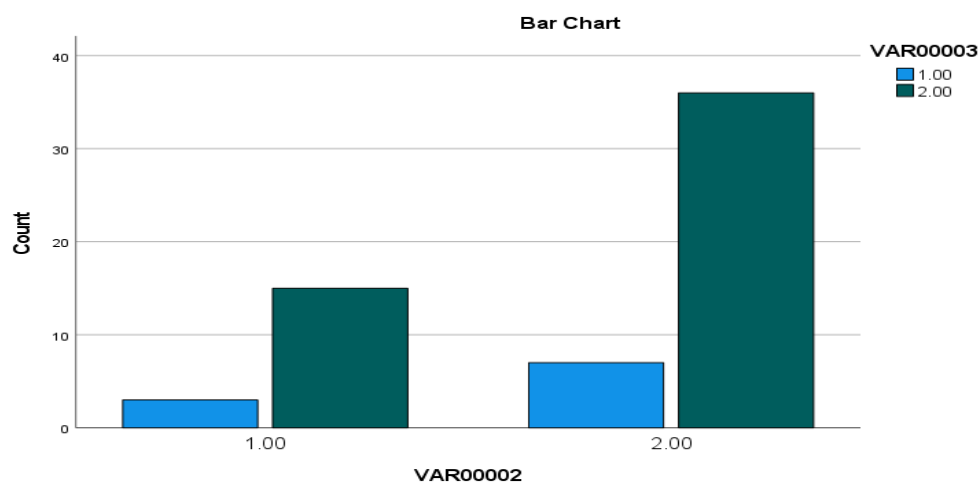


Figure 19 illustrates that there is a statistically significant variation in the application of the argumentative indicators of the opening stage by American and Canadian police. Canadian officers put the suspects on the spotlight more than American officers do. The Canadian police are more argumentative. In addition, they open the lines of communication if it is stopped. They challenge their suspects to hear the events from them. There was video evidence, DNA evidence, blood samples, and other evidence in both Canadian cases. Despite of this, the Canadian police want to hear the suspects' versions of events and are continuously challenging them to explain themselves.

The Canadian police create the impression that the suspect is not being interrogated and that they and the suspects are having a polite conversation. They usually settle their disagreements with the suspects by agreeing with suspects' remarks and showing their good side. At the same time, American police only occasionally and with minor events in the crime demonstrate agreement.

C. The Argumentation

Table 75

Chi-square for the Indicators in Argumentation Stage

Argumentation Stage Indicators	American Police	Canadian Police	Chi-Square	Statistical Significance	Significance
Subordinative	10	37	19,702	.036	Yes
Coordinative	12	15	0,333	.067	Non

Figure 20

Chi-square for the Indicators in Argumentation Stage

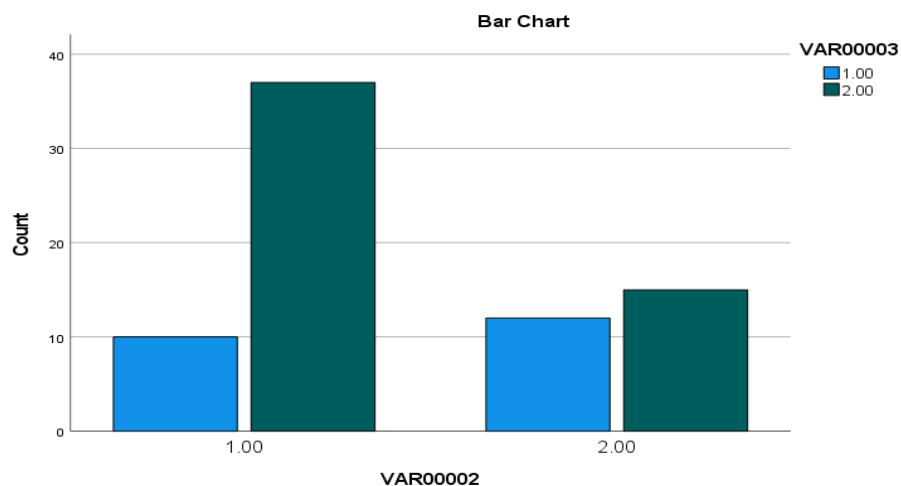


Figure 20 reveals a statistically significant difference in the use of subordinative arguments by Canadian and American police officers. Canadian police use more subordinative arguments due to the nature of the suspects being questioned. The Canadian suspects in both cases are almost silent and refuse to confess or deny the allegations leveled against them. Hence, the police officer used such indicators to get the suspects to confess.

In regards of coordinative indicators, the chi-square test demonstrates that there is no statistically significant difference in the use of such argumentative indicators by American and Canadian police investigators, because both of them are good arguers.

D. The Concluding Stage

Table 76

Chi-square for the Indicators in Concluding Stage

Concluding Stage indicators	American Police	Canadian Police	Chi-square	Statistical Significance	Significance
The investigator maintains his opinion	2	3	0,2	.490	Non
The investigator removes his suspicion	1	4	1,8	1.000	Non

Figure 21

Chi-square for the Indicators in Concluding Stage

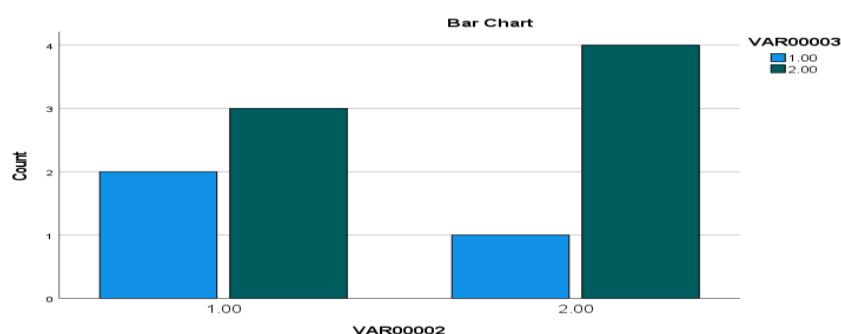


Figure 21 demonstrates that there is no statistically significant difference in the concluding stage argumentative indicators utilized by American and

Canadian police investigators. American and Canadian investigators have established the result of police interrogation in almost the same way.

4.5.2 American vs. Canadian Suspects

A. The Confrontation Stage

Table 77

Chi-square for the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

Confrontation Stage Indicators	American Police	Canadian Police	Chi-Square	Statistical Significance	Significance
Propositional Attitude	18	5	7,347	<.001	Yes
Force Modifying	14	5	5,263	<.001	Non
Dispute	8	2	3,6	.011	Non

Figure 22

Chi-square for the Indicators in Confrontation Stage

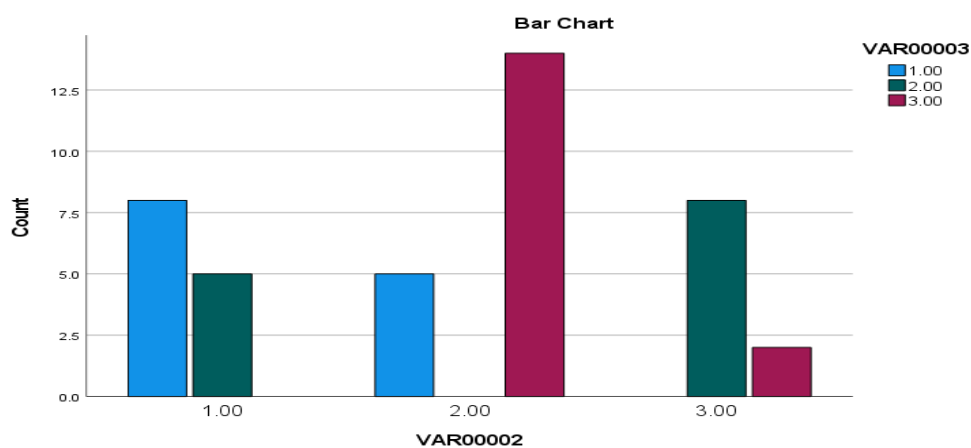


Figure 22 shows that, with the exception of the dispute argumentative indicators, there is statistically significant difference in the use of the argumentative indicators of the confrontation stage by the American and

Canadian suspects. Because they deny the charges and the allegations made against them, American suspects use more dispute indicators than Canadian suspects.

B. The Opening Stage

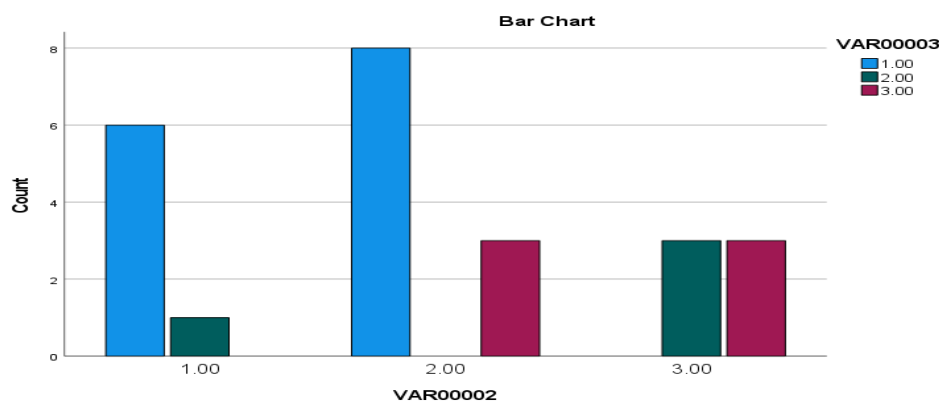
Table 78

Chi-square for the Indicators in Opening Stage

The Opening Stage	American Police	Canadian Police	Chi-square	Significance Statistical	Significance
Denying the other arguer's proposition	6	1	3,571	.008	Non
Implicit acceptance of the burden of proof	3	8	2,272	<.001	Non
The suspect's agreement with the other arguer's proposition	3	3	0,00	.006	Non

Figure 23

Chi-square for the Indicators in Opening Stage



As indicated in the table above, there is no statistically significant difference between American and Canadian suspects in using the argumentative indicators of the opening stage. In all situations, they accept the burden of proof, deny the charges against them, and agree on some of the police officers' points of view.

C. The Argumentation Stage

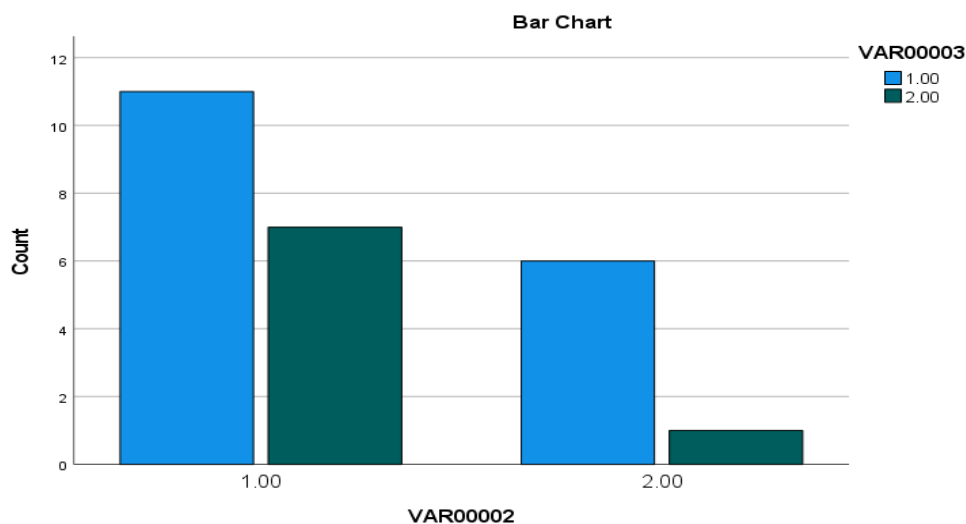
Table 79

Chi-square for the Indicators in Argument Stage

Argumentation Stage Indicators	American Police	Canadian police	Chi-Square	Statistical Significance	Significance
Subordinative	11	7	0,888	.236	Non
Coordinative	6	1	3,571	.480	Non

Figure 24

Chi-square for the Indicators in Argument Stage



The table above reveals that there is no statistically significant difference in the use of argumentative indicators of the argument stage between American and Canadian suspects. Each uses a variety of subordinative and coordinative arguments to explain their positions.

D. The concluding Stage

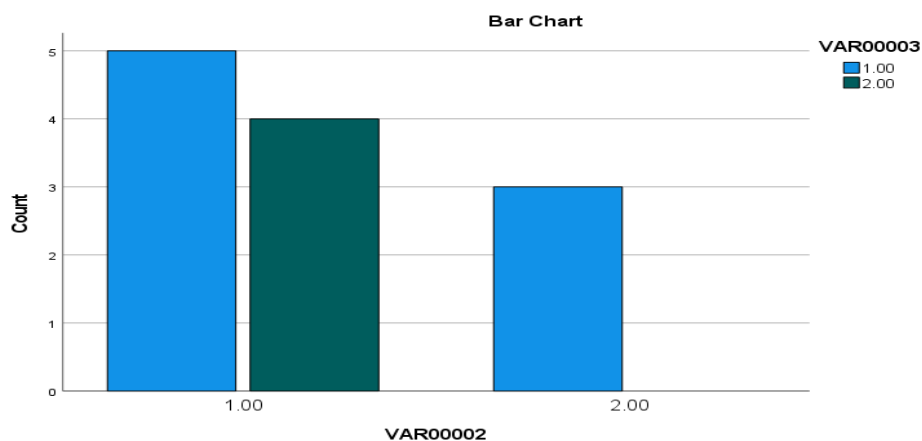
Table 80

Chi-square for the Indicators in Concluding Stage

Concluding Stage indicators	American Police	Canadian Police	Chi-square	Statistical Significance	Significance
The suspect accepts the police's proposition.	5	4	0,111	.157	Non
The suspect does not accept the police's proposition.	3	0	3	480	Non

Figure 25

Chi-square for the Indicators in Concluding Stage



The table above reveals that there is no statistically significant difference in the use of argumentative indicators of the concluding stage between American and Canadian suspects. Suspects either yield and retract their viewpoints, and hence confess, or they defend their positions by refusing to speak or confess.

CHAPTER FIVE

CONCLUSIONS, RECOMANDATIONS, AND SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER STUDIES

5.0 Introductory Note

This chapter discusses the conclusions arrived at in the analysis of the selected data. It also provides recommendations founded on the outcomes of the study, and suggestions for future research.

5.1 Conclusions

On the basis of the findings of the analysis, various conclusions can be derived.

- 1- In response to the first question, "what are the argumentative indicators of each stage of argumentation in the American and Canadian police interrogations?" , the result reveals that not all the argumentative indicators explained in the model are found in police interrogations. This type of discourse requires a specific set of indicators in each stage as follows:
 - The confrontation stage includes request for justification, request for clarification, strong assertive, weak assertive, semi-assertive and doubt indicators.
 - The opening stage is marked by challenge to defend a standpoint, acceptance of the challenge, and agreement and disagreement with the other arguer's proposition.
 - The argumentation stage comprises coordinative and subordinative arguments.
 - The concluding stage encompasses withdrawal of standpoint and maintenance of an opinion.

Accordingly, hypothesis **No.1** is validated.

2- Regarding the second question, "what are the most and least frequent argumentative indicators used by the American police and suspects in the stages of argumentation and what functions do they perform?", the findings show that, in relation to the four stages, confrontation, opening, argumentation, and concluding, the indicators are listed as follows:

- Requests for clarification, agreement with the opposing arguer's proposition, coordinative arguments, and indicators of maintenance are the most frequent argumentative indicators utilized by American police. The functions of the aforementioned indicators are to seek information, demonstrate agreement, provide an extra motive for the suspects to confess, and set the result of the discussion, respectively.
- The least frequent argumentative indicators utilized by American police are strong assertives, challenges to defend a position, subordinative argument, and elimination of suspicion. Their functions are to express an opinion, challenge the suspect, provide a reason for the suspect to reveal the truth, and to remove a suspicion, in that order.
- Strong assertives, denying the other arguer's proposition, subordinative argument, and acceptance of the other arguer's proposition are the most prominent argumentative indicators used by American suspects. Their functions are to express an opinion, deny a proposition, present a rationale to sustain a position, and withdraw an opinion, in that succession.
- Semi-assertives, acceptance of the burden of proof, coordinative indicators, and non-acceptance of a proposition are the least

frequent argumentative indicators employed by American suspects. They are used to express opinions, accept the burden of defending a viewpoint, present an extra cause for being innocent, and withdraw a previous position, in that sequence.

Hence, hypothesis **No.2**.

3- Concerning the third question, "what are the most and least frequent argumentative indicators used by the Canadian police and suspects in the stages of argumentation and what functions do they perform?", the study concludes that, in relation to the four stages, confrontation, opening, argumentation, and concluding, the indicators can be itemized as follows:

- Weak assertives, an agreement with the opposing arguer's proposition, subordinative arguments, and withdrawal of previous position are the most frequent argumentative indicators utilized by Canadian police. The functions of the aforementioned indicators are to express an opinion, demonstrate agreement, provide a reason for the suspects to confess, and set the result of the discussion, respectively.
- The least frequent argumentative indicators utilized by Canadian police are request for justification, challenges to defend a position, subordinative argument, and elimination of suspicion. The indicators' functions are to justify things, challenge the suspect, provide a reason for the suspect to reveal the truth, and to remove a suspicion, in that order.
- Weak assertives, acceptance of the burden of proof, subordinative argument, and acceptance of the other arguer's proposition are the

most prominent argumentative indicators used by Canadian suspects. The indicators' functions are to express an opinion, deny a proposition, present a rationale to sustain a position, and withdraw an opinion, in that succession.

- Semi-assertives, Denying the other arguer's proposition, and coordinative indicators are the least frequent argumentative indicators employed by Canadian suspects. Their functions are to express opinions, to reject a standpoint, and to present an extra cause for being innocent, in that sequence.

As a result of these conclusions, hypothesis **No.3** is validated.

- 4- In relation to the forth question, "How do American and Canadian police and suspects differ in applying the argumentative indicators during interrogation?", it is found that the use of the argumentative indicators of the confrontation, the opening, and part of the argumentation stage by American and Canadian police differs. Canadian officers use proportional attitude indicators more than American officers because they share their thoughts on the incident, present new insights, and they use friendly expressions while they talk to the suspects and they are not being overly demanding. However, they are similar in utilizing the argumentative indicators of the concluding stage. American and Canadian investigators established the outcome of police interrogation in nearly identical ways. Meanwhile, American and Canadian suspects differ in using part of indicators of the confrontation, and they are similar in applying the argumentative indicators of the opening, argumentation, and concluding stages. As a result, hypothesis **No.4** is rejected.

5.2 Recommendation

In the view of the aforementioned conclusions, the following recommendations are suggested.

1. Discourse analysts need to be familiar with argumentative tactics and how they function in legal contexts such as police interrogations.
2. Linguists need to pay closer attention to the impact of argumentative indicators on the flow of discussion in forensic texts such as police interrogation.
3. Students who are interested in the rules of the argumentation and the possibility of their application in forensic texts need to be familiar with this study.

5.3 Suggestions for Further Research

In light of this study, a number of suggestions for future research can be made.

- 1- A contrastive study is well worth studying to examine the dialectical moves in both American and Iraqi police interrogations.
- 2- A pragma-dialectical study can be conducted to analyze fallacies in political speeches.
- 3- Fallacies in police interrogations are also worth investigating.
- 4- A pragma-dialectical study of news reports on climate change can be conducted.

References

- Al-Ka'bi, A. (2019). *Argumentative indicators in some of Chomsky's political discourse*. [Unpublished doctoral dissertation] University of Basrah: Iraq.
- Al-Sahlanee, M. (2015). *A linguistic analysis of presupposition in police interrogations*. [Unpublished doctoral dissertation] University of Babylon.
- Barus, R. D., Saragih, A., & Zein, T. (2017). Speech acts in police investigative interviews. *Linguistik Terapan*, 14(3), 288-296.
<https://doi.org/10.24114/lt.v14i3.11269>
- Besnard, B. & N. Hunter. (2008). *Elements of argumentation*. Cambridge: The MIT press.
- Blair, J. & R. Johnson (1987). Argumentation as dialectical. *Argumentation*, 1, 41-56. <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00127118>
- Bonevac, D. (2003). Pragma-dialectics and beyond. *Argumentation*, 17, 1-10.
<https://doi.org/10.1023/A:1026311002268>
- Bryman, A. (2012). *Social research methods*. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Bussmann, H. (2006). *Routledge dictionary of language and linguistics*. London and New York. Tylor & Francis.
- Capone, A., Franco P. & Marco C. (2013). *Perspectives in pragmatics and philosophy*. Bern: Springer.
- Cohen, T. (1973). Illocutions and per locutions. *Journal of Foundations Language*, 9 (4), 492-503. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/25000695>
- Creswell, J. (2009). *Research design: Qualitative, quantitative, and mixed method approaches*. London: Sage.
- Drid, T. (2016). A pragma-dialectical approach to argumentative discourse. *Khazar Journal of Humanities and Social Sciences*, 19(4).20-35.
<http://hdl.handle.net/20.500.12323/3465>

- Duwe, G (2007). *Mass murder in the United States*. Jefferson, NC: McFarland & Company.
- Eastwood, J., & Snook, B. (2010). Comprehending Canadian police cautions: Are the rights to silence and legal counsel understandable? *Behavioral Sciences and the Law*, 28 (3), 366-77. DOI:10.1002/bsl.898
- Eisa, S.A. (2008). *Discourse analysis of argumentation from an English /Arabic translation perspective*. [Master's thesis. UAE: Sharjah].
<https://dspace.aus.edu/xmlui/handle/11073/52>
- Fahmi, R.N. & Rustono.(2018) Types of speech acts in Indonesian debate. *Seloka: Jurnal Pendidikan Bahasa Dan Sastra Indonesia* 7(1). 28-37.
- Foot, R. (2018, February 26). Canadian Charter of Rights and Freedoms. The Canadian encyclopedia.
<https://www.thecanadianencyclopedia.ca/en/article/canadian-charter-of-rights-and-freedoms>
- Gerber, M. (2011). Pragmatism, pragma-dialectics, and methodology: towards a More ethical notion of criticism. *Speaker and Gavel*, 28(1), 20-22.
- Ghadhab, A. (2018). *A Pragma-dialectical study of argumentative indicators IN American electoral campaign debates*. [Master's thesis, University of Thi-Qar].
- Hample, D. (1985). A third perspective on argument. *Journal of Philosophy and Rhetoric*, 18(1), 1-22 <https://philpapers.org/rec/HAMATP-2>
- Harvie, R. & Foster, H. (1996). When the constable blunders: A comparison of the law of police interrogation in Canada and the United States. *Seattle University Law Review*, 19 (3),
<https://digitalcommons.law.seattleu.edu/sulr/vol19/iss3/5/>

- Henkemans, A.F.S (2014). Speech acts theory and the study of argumentation. *Journal of Studies in Logic, Grammar and Rhetoric*, 36 (1), 52-55
<http://dx.doi.org/10.2478/slgr-2014-0002>
- Henkemans, A. (1998). Verbal indicators of argumentation and explanation. *OSSA Conference Archive*, 100.
<https://scholar.uwindsor.ca/ossaarchive/OSSA2/papersandcommentaries/100>
- Henkemans, A. (2003). Indicators of complex argumentation. *OSSA Conference Archive*, 83.
<https://scholar.uwindsor.ca/ossaarchive/OSSA5/papersandcommentaries/83>
- Hietanen, M. (2007). *Paul's argumentation in Galatians: A pragma-dialectical Analysis*. T& T Clark International.
- Houtlosser, P. (2002). Indicators of a point of view. In van Eemeren (Eds.), *Advances in pragma-dialectics* (pp. 34-95). Amsterdam: Vale Press.
- Hussain, S & Noor, N.M. (2017). Argumentative indicators in sopoBlogs. *Journal of Pertanika: Social Sciences & Humanities*.
www.pertanika.upm.edu.my.
- Johnson A. (2002). Pragmatic implications of So-prefaced questions in formal police interviews. In Cotterill J (Eds.), *Language in the Legal Process* (pp.91-110). Palgrave Macmillan, London.
- Johnson, R. (2000). *Manifest rationality: A pragmatic theory*. New Jersey: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates, Inc.
- Jones, A. (2016). *Court dismisses appeal of Tori Stafford killer Michael Rafferty*. Toronto Star.
<https://www.thestar.com/news/crime/2016/10/24/tori-staffords-killer-michael-rafferty-seeks-new-trial-today.html>
- Kadhim, W. H. (2021). *A sociopragmatic study of power in selected American police interviews*. [Unpublished Master's thesis. University of Kerbala].

- Kassin, S. (2005). On the psychology of confessions: Dose innocence put innocents at risk. *American Psychologist*, 60(3), 215-228.
<https://doi.org/10.1037/0003-066X.60.3.215>
- Kassin, S. M., & Sukel, H. (1997). Coerced confessions and the jury: an experimental test of the “harmless error” rule. *Law and Human Behavior*, 21, 27–46.
- Kassin, S., & Gudjonsson, G. (2004). The psychology of confessions: A review of the literature and issues. *Psychological Science in the Public Interest*, 5(2), 33–67.
- Kienpointner, M., Kindt, W. (1997) On the problem of bias in political argumentation: An investigation into discussions about political asylum in Germany and Austria. *Journal of Pragmatics*, 27(5), 555-585.
[https://doi.org/10.1016/S0378-2166\(96\)00035-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0378-2166(96)00035-5)
- Kozinski, W. (2018). The Reid interrogation technique and false confessions: A time for change. *Seattle Journal for Social Justice*, 16(2), 301-345.
- Lee, L. (2019a, September 10). Bryan Greenwell and Jodie Cecil case summary. Criminal Words. <https://criminalwords.net/2019/09/10/bryan-greenwell-and-jodie-cecil-casesummary>
- Leo, R. (2008). *Police interrogation and American justice*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
- Luque, B.L. (2011). *Giving reasons: A linguistic-pragmatic approach to argumentation theory* (1st ed). New York: Springer.
- Mason, M. (2016). The ‘preparatory’ and ‘argumentation’ stages of police interrogation: A linguistic analysis of a criminal investigation. *Language & Communication*, 48, 79-87.
<https://doi.org/10.1016/j.langcom.2016.03.001>

- Medalie, J. R., Zeitz, L. & Alexander, P. (1968). Custodial police interrogation in our nation's capital: The attempt to implement Miranda. *Michigan Law Review*, 66 (7), 1347-1422. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/1287105>
- Murder of Yeardeley Love. (2022, January 20). In *Wikipedia*.
https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Murder_of_Yeardeley_Love
- Musi, E. (2017). *Evidently epistential adverbs are argumentative indicators: A corpus-based study*. Columbia University.
- Palmieri, R. (2014). *Corporative argumentation in takeover bids*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Pre-Arrest Questioning. (2022, January 25). In *Miranda Rights.org*.
<http://www.Mirandawarning.org/index.html>
- Renkema, J. (2009). *Discourse, of course: An overview of research in discourse studies*. Amsterdam and Philadelphia
- Robert, J. (2015). *Communication studies theories*. New Jersey: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates, Inc.
- Rogers, R., Harrison, K.S., Shuman, D.W., Sewell, K.W., & Hazelwood, L.L. (2007). An analysis of Miranda warnings and waiver: Comprehension and coverage. *Law and Human Behaviour*, 31(2),177-192.
DOI:10.1007/s10979-006-9054-8
- Royal, R. F., & Schutt, S. R. (1976). *The gentle art of interviewing and interrogation: A professional manual and guide*. Englewood Cliffs: Prentice-Hall.
- Russell Williams (Criminal), (2022, February 8). In *Wikipedia*.
[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Russell_Williams_\(criminal\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Russell_Williams_(criminal))
- Sadiq, M. T. (2011). *A Discourse analysis of the language of interrogation in police/criminal investigations in the Kano Metropolis* [Master's thesis, Zaria: Ahmadu Bello University].

<https://www.semanticscholar.org/paper/ADISCOURSE-ANALYSISOF-THE-LANGUAGE-OF-IN-THE-Sadiq/958ac998f351e4ab1e7540c0bc9a56f6a3003>

- Schollum, M. (2005). *Investigative interviewing: The literature*. Wellington: Office of the Commissioner of Police.
- Searle (1970). *Speech Acts; an essay in the philosophy of language* (2nd ed.). Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Solan, M. & Tiersma, P. (2005). *Speaking of crime: The language of criminal justice*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
- Tindale, C. (1999). *Acts of arguing: A rhetorical model of argument*. Albany: State University of New York Press.
- Van Eemeren & Grootendorst, R. (1984). *Speech acts in argumentative discussions. A theoretical model for the analysis of discussions directed towards solving conflicts of opinion*. Berlin: De Gruyter/ Foris Publications.
- Van Eemeren , F.H. , Grootendorst, R., Henkemans, F. Blair, J., Johnson, R, Krabbe, E. , Plantin, C. , Walton, D. , Willard, C. , Woods, J. & Zarefsky, D. (2009). *Fundamentals of argumentation theory: A handbook of historical backgrounds and contemporary developments*. New York and London. Routledge
- Van Eemeren F.H. & Grootendorst, R. (2004). *A Systematic theory of argumentation: the pragma- dialectical approach*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Van Eemeren F.H. (2015). *Reasonableness and effectiveness in argumentative discourse: Fifty contributions to the development of pragma-dialectics*. Dordrecht: Springer.
- Van Eemeren F.H., Henkemans, F. (2017). *Argumentation analysis and evaluation*. New York and London. Routledge.

- Van Eemeren F.H., Houtlosser, P, & Henkemans, A. F. S. (2007). *Argumentative indicators: A pragma- dialectical study*. The Netherlands: Springe
- Van Eemeren, F. H. & Grootendorst, R. (1983). *Speech acts in argumentative discussions. A theoretical model for the analysis of discussions directed towards solving conflicts of opinion*. Dordrecht: Fortis Publications.
- Van Eemeren, F.H. & Grootendorst, R. (1992). *Argumentation communication and fallacies: A pragma-dialectical perspective*. Hillsdale: Lawrence Erlbaum.
- Van Eemeren, F.H. & Houtlosser, P. (1999). Delivering the goods in critical discussion. In van Eemeren et al. (eds.) *Proceedings of the fourth conference of the international society for the study of argumentation*(pp.163-167), Amsterdam: Amsterdam University Press.
- Van Eemeren, F.H., Garssen, B., Krabbe,C. Henkemans, F. , Verheij , B & Wagemans,J. (2014). *Handbook of argumentation theory*. Springer
- Van Eemeren, F.H., Grootendorst, R. & Henkemans, F. (2008). *Argumentation analysis, evaluation, presentation*. Taylor & Francis e-Library.
- Van Emeren, F.H., Grootendorst,R. & Henkemans, A.F.S. (2007). *Argumentative indicators in discourse: A pragma-dialectical study*. The Netherlands. Springer.
- Walton, D (2003). The interrogation as a type of dialogue. *Journal of Pragmatics*, 35(12), 1771-1802.
- Wenzel (2006). Three perspectives on argument: rhetoric, dialectic, logic. In Trapp & Schuetz (eds.) *Perspectives on Argumentation: Essays in the Honor of Wayne Brockriede*(pp.9-26). New York: International Debate Education Association.

- Wenzel, J. W. (1979). Jurgen Habermas and the dialectical perspective on argumentation. *Journal of the American Forensic Associations*, 16(2), 83-94.
- Williams, C. (2007). Research methods. *Journal of Business and Economics*, 5(3), 65-72. <https://doi.org/10.19030/jber.v5i3.2532>
- Zarefsky, D. (2005). *Argumentation: The study of effective reasoning*. (2nd ed.). USA. The Great Courses.

APPENDECES

Appendix A: George Huguely Police Interrogation

<https://criminalwords.net/2019/09/09/george-huguely-police-interrogation/>

Investigator: I'm just saying, um, I don't have any arrest warrants for you. Okay?

George Huguely: Okay.

Investigator 1: However, I am investigating a case and you are being detained. Which means right now you are not free to leave.

George Huguely: Okay.

Investigator 1: So, I want to talk to you about this to find out you know what I'm saying? So, before I want to talk to you, I have to make sure you do understand your rights. Okay, now that I've explained to you what is going on with that and stuff. You understand that?

George Huguely: Yes.

Investigator 1: Okay. Today's date is May 3rd, 2010. The current time is 7:52.

Investigator 1: What's that?

Investigator 2: I thought it was two.

Investigator 1: So your first name is George? G-E-

George Huguely: O-R-G-E

Investigator 1: And your middle name?

George Huguely: Is Wesley.

Investigator 1: How do you spell that?

George Huguely: W-E-S-L-E-Y

Investigator 1: And spell your last name

George Huguely: H-U-G-U-E-L-Y

Investigator 1: I'm Lesly and this is also a detective with.

George Huguely: Yeah.

Investigator 1: This is just something I have to ask you. Can you read and write?

George Huguely: Yes.

Investigator 1: Have any threats or promises been made to you by police or the attorney's office?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: Before we ask you any questions you must understand your rights. You have the right to remain silent. Anything you say can be used against you in court. You have the right to talk to a lawyer before questioning or have one present during questioning. If you cannot afford a lawyer one will be provided for you. And if you are willing to talk to us now you have the right to stop at any time. Got it?

George Huguely: Yup.

Investigator 1: Awesome. Need your signature there, that you understand your rights and are willing to talk to us. And the time now is 7:53. First I want to do a background on you if that's okay? How long have you been a student?

George Huguely: It's my fourth year.

Investigator 1: Fourth year? Oh, okay. Long time then, huh? How long have you lived where you live right now?

George Huguely: Two years

Investigator 1: Two years? Okay. And you play lacrosse?

George Huguely: Yeah.

Investigator 1: How long have you been playing that?

George Huguely: Since I was very young. At school for four years.

Investigator 1: Alright. Um, do you work anywhere?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: No? Where do you get your support from? Family? Um, Let's kind of start, I want to kind of ask you some questions and I'll explain some things a little later, um, tell me about your day yesterday.

George Huguely: Played golf with my parents, father-son and then ...

Investigator 1: Where was that at?

George Huguely: Um, wintergreen.

Investigator 1: Wintergreen? Okay.

George Huguely: And I went to dinner with my dad with two buddies.

Investigator 1: Where was that?

George Huguely: We went to CNL. Um, and then went out to the bar for a little awhile ...

Investigator 1: What time did you go out to eat?

George Huguely: I would say we left like 5ish, so I we probably back at 7:30 for dinner.

Investigator 1: Okay.

George Huguely: Then went home. Drank a few beers. Went to the bar for a little while.

Investigator 1: Which one?

George Huguely: heights.

Investigator 1: Oh, Okay.

George Huguely: Then I went over to talk to Yeardeley and...

Investigator 1: Who's Yeardeley?

George Huguely: Yeardeley is my former girlfriend. But I went over to talk to Yeardeley. I was like "YEARDLEY" and she was like already totally freaked out because of what she did this past, like a few days ago, and we haven't talked since and I was just going to like talk to her. And she was already like "ah"; freaking out. Like, you know and I was like "I'm just trying to talk to you". And like she like started to be like, really like, defensive against it. Because the week before she came into my apartment and like attacked, like started striking me and I was like "you gotta leave" and like, my roommates girlfriend had to be like, take her out of there because of this. So like, when I went in to talk to, talk to her, she was already on the defensive edge. I was like "I'm not here to like, I'm just here to talk to you" and she got all like, sat up. Like against the wall, like if it was in this corner she was up against the wall and I was like, we were sitting there talking and she started getting like, all like aggressive like after this so I was like "chill out" and shook her a little bit and she started being like, freaking out. And I was like "Listen, I'm not here to do anything, I'm here to talk to you about everything that ensued in the last week." And She was like, started being like "no no no" hitting her head [pretends to hit head on wall] like "stop it" I was like "Yeardeley what the hell, like, we were just going to talk". It was not at all a good conversation because like, she was already like, freaking out just seeing me, just even seeing me there.

Investigator 1: Okay, what happened next?

George Huguely: Next she just kept hitting her head on the wall where she was sitting on the bed and I was like [demonstrates grabbing arms] grabbed her and was like "stop" and I looked at her and was like "we need to like talk about this". Like I held her arms and stuff but like I never struck her, never like hit her [demonstrates hitting someone] hit her in the face or anything. I was just like "we need to talk" and she was like so, like what's the word? [demonstrates violently shaking with his arms and dodging motions] fish out of the water like. So like, all this. All because of what happened last week and I was like "Listen like, I'm not here to like fight with you or do anything, I'm here to talk to you." And like "noooo get away from me". Like that's what happened. I left and she was in her bed, I think her nose was

bleeding a little bit but she was, when I left she was still in her bed. Actually, she may, at one point she was on the floor and we were talkin, we were, and she was like still fighting. Actually no, she was running to her desk where her desk is and she was like “you have to leave, you have to leave, you have to leave, you have to leave” like all this stuff. I was like “alright, but I want to talk to you after all of this.” I was a little persistent because of the situation. Like, my former girlfriend who, what happened last week, you know, alright like talk and everything. Somehow we ended up, somehow I was wrestling her on the floor and I was like “stop” and I was holding her but I never struck her or anything. And I think that might have been when her nose started to bleed, actually. When I was holding her on the floor being like “Listen like, I wanted to talk to her about everything because I got like, whatever, text messages from her and all this stuff. That’s when I was like holding her, not like forcefully. That’s when her nose started to bleed and her face on the ground and then the conversation was going nowhere and nothing was happening . I left and went back home.

Investigator 1: Okay. Let’s kinda start from, you keep talking about something that happened last week. What happened last week?

George Huguely: What happened last week?

Investigator 1: Does it kind set up the...

George Huguely: Well, yeah. That’s why I was going over there to talk to her...

Investigator 1: What happened last week? Let’s start there.

George Huguely: Last week? Well, a lot of things happened. Basically she came over to my appointment at, on, ...

Investigator 1: Let me stop you, real quick. How long have you been dating?

George Huguely: Two years.

Investigator 1: Two years? Okay.

George Huguely: Yeah, two and a half years.

Investigator 1: Okay, alright. Now start from the last week.

George Huguely: We broke up like a month ago but we have been talking and hanging out and stuff.

Investigator 1: When do you break up?

George Huguely: We broke up because she wanted to. ‘Cause she wasn’t real sure about all of this because we’re both like graduating and she wants to move to New York and I want to move to like San Francisco. So she was like “we don’t really know” and she was like, sort of unsure about all of this so we broke, so she was like, sorta broke it off like slightly over a period of time. Like “we shouldn’t hang out anymore” but we were still hanging out and everything. And then, come a week ago she went down to Carolina. I don’t really know what happened, she told me what happened, which was she sent me some text messages like “oh I’m so glad I like, I [studders] fucked so and so.” So I didn’t respond to that. I was like “whatever” ...

Investigator 1: She said she “fucked” somebody? Is that what you just said?

George Huguely: Hooked up, fucked, same thing. So I didn’t respond to that. Those were like text messages. So I was like look at this, this is fucked up but didn’t respond. So I went to the bar. Saw her at the bar, actually, and she’s all like fucked up. So I was talking to a buddy and uh, and she comes over. My buddy like, didn’t even bother. And then I get home like on my sofa and she comes in the door, like this. With the same buddies I was with earlier and two girls that were visiting deciding if they wanted to come here to school or not. And she walks to the door and comes over and started hitting me in the face and I was like “ah stop, get off of me, leave me alone, like you can’t be doing this” and my roommate’s girlfriend, I was calling her from the kitchen like “get her out of here” like never touched her or struck her. Like “Listen, you have to like stop hitting me” and she wouldn’t stop. She kept

coming. So that happened. So I was going over there to talk to her, last night, on Saturday. That's the reason I was going over there to talk to her. I never like hit her, or struck her, like nothing

Investigator 1: Okay, so you go over there. Knock on the door?

George Huguely: Her front door was open. Her room door was closed and I knocked like this [knocks on wall] "Yeardley". Like she heard me, open the door and went...

Investigator 1: Went where?

George Huguely: To her room.

Investigator 1: Straight to her bedroom?

George Huguely: Well, yeah, I mean...

Investigator 1: How did you get through the door?

George Huguely: Her door? Front door?

Investigator 1: Her door.

George Huguely: Actually, it might have been locked.

Investigator 1: Mhm. It was.

George Huguely: Yeah. Actually.

Investigator 1: Just be honest.

George Huguely: Yeah, actually it was locked because I think I put a hole. Pretty sure it was locked now that you said that.

Investigator 1: Why would you do that?

George Huguely: Because I wanted to talk to her. She's been sending me like emails.

Investigator 1: Was she telling you to leave?

George Huguely: Well I guess, once I was in her room. She was like, very, like: I don't want to talk to you and all stuff and ...

Investigator 1: What was she wearing?

George Huguely: She was, what was she wearing? She was in her bed. A tee-shirt?

Investigator 1: Okay. So she was in her bed in a tee-shirt. Light on, light off?

George Huguely: Light off. I'm pretty sure this was around 12:45 ish. So she like, probably, either asleep or, you know, doing something. So I went in there to talk to her and she was very on edge. "I don't want to talk; I don't want to talk". And I was like "what you told last week was outrageous, I just want to talk to you."

Investigator 2: Why did you push her doing that?

George Huguely: Because I want to talk to her.

Investigator 1: Continue on. It's fine. Continue on. So you want to talk to her and she doesn't want to talk to you.

George Huguely: Not really. I mean, we talked though. There were parts where we were talking and then ...

Investigator 1: Do you know what you were talking about?

George Huguely: I mean, about so many different things.

Investigator 1: Okay. Like what?

George Huguely: Like what she did last week. Like, how she attacked me. You know. Like she went to Carolina Sunday. I still want to figure out things. She came over and attacked me on Tuesday. I was sitting like, I was over there to talk, like this is outrageous. I mean, and, because I was trying to be everything better. Then like, you know. Then all of this happens. And then she comes and attacks me. It's to the point where my roommates have to take her out of there...

Investigator 1: Okay. Let's go back to you're in her room tonight.

George Huguely: Last night. Yeah. And so she's like in the corner. If her bed was pushed all the way back in the corner. And she, I'm pretty sure she was very defensive because she knew how sad I was because I've told her through emails how sad I was about what she did

and about Tuesday night and coming in and striking me. And so I was like “Listen like, I want to talk to you, what you did was bullshit. That’s not like, okay...”

Investigator 1: So you were pretty upset, pretty angry.

George Huguely: Um, yeah, I mean, I was more emotional than angry.

Investigator 1: Okay. You were hurt in.

George Huguely: She was like sort of pushing everything she did to the back burner and talking about, like try to put everything she did... wasn’t important. And we talked. She kept saying things like “well, I don’t trust you” stuff like that. It kept going to the point where I was like “Yeardley, we have to figure out what’s going on”, and she was like “I don’t want to talk about it” and she like pushed me like “get out of here” like “go” and I was like “no” like “we have to talk”. Like ...

Investigator 1: Where are you holding on her?

George Huguely: On her arms.

Investigator 1: Up here?

George Huguely: Like shoulders. Yeah like, Yeah. Never struck her, if I could like show you like...

Investigator 1: No, I’m sorry. Stay on her arms?

George Huguely: Come on like. She was like wiggling and like hide in the corner, really like defensively almost. And then like wrestled on the ground the same way. Her nose started bleeding. Then she ended up back in bed. Then I left. I was like not going anywhere ...

Investigator 1: How did she get back in bed?

George Huguely: Ummm... We were like wrestling and we stood up and I tossed her like pushed her onto the bed like “go to bed, I’ll talk to you later”. I didn’t like throw her. We were like standing at this point after we wrestled on the ground. She had like a bloody nose. Like “go to bed”.

Investigator 1: So you kinda like tossed her on the bed and left.

George Huguely: Yeah.

Investigator 1: Did you go back to check on her at any point?

George Huguely: No I did not.

Investigator 1: Did you touch her neck area at all? Choke her at one point?

George Huguely: Uh... I may have grabbed her a little bit by the neck but I never like, strangled her. Yeah I mean, during the whole commotion. I may have grabbed her neck but I was never like, strangling her.

Investigator 1: Alright, I have to check on something real quick, then I will be right back.

George Huguely: Mind if I use the restroom?

Investigator 1: Um, actually if I can have one second.

George Huguely: I’m sorry I had to take that call. I apologize. You said you got there at 12:45? Around that area.

Investigator 1: Why do you think it was that time?

George Huguely: Because I went to dinner 7:30 I think. Went to the bar for a little bit. That’s just my...

Investigator 1: Estimate. Did you call her to let her know you were coming or text her?

George Huguely: No because she says she lost her phone the night she came in my apartment. She says it’s in my apartment but it’s not. So she doesn’t have a phone so I did not call her or text her.

Investigator 1: How long do you think you were at her apartment when you were there?

George Huguely: Like between, around like 8 minutes...

Investigator 1: Okay. Not long

George Huguely: I mean like, 8-10 minutes.

Investigator 1: Was anybody else there? Just the two of you?

George Huguely: No. Her roommates weren't there actually.

Investigator 1: Um, okay. When you left her apartment, did you take anything with you?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: Nothing at all?

George Huguely: No. She was in her bed.

Investigator 1: Alright. but her laptop is missing I guess. Did you grab it when you were leaving?

George Huguely: Yeah I did actually.

Investigator 1: Is it at your apartment?

George Huguely: Yeah. Somewhere at my apartment. I can give it to her.

Investigator 1: Why did you take her laptop?

George Huguely: Because I was so pissed that she wouldn't talk to me. I don't know. I took it almost as collateral I guess. It's not reasonable logic. But, I don't know.

Investigator 1: Okay. Did you take anything else besides her laptop?

George Huguely: No

Investigator 1: Nothing?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: Alright. So when you left out of there you saw she was bleeding out her nose. Did you try to call rescue or anything to make sure she was alright?

George Huguely: No, I did not...

Investigator 1: Why?

George Huguely: Uh... I didn't think it was like, I didn't think she was like in need of going to the emergency room. She had like, a bloody

Investigator 1: Why did you think that?

George Huguely: I don't know. I mean ...

Investigator 1: Did you say and correct me if I'm wrong, when you were shaking her and her head was hitting the wall?

George Huguely: Well that was the beginning. Initially, like, she was up in the corner like [demonstrates], "get out of here" this, but ...

Investigator 1: At any time when you were shaking her, did her head bang the wall? You already said you didn't hit her.

George Huguely: I mean I wasn't like throwing her into the wall. We were sitting on the bed against the wall and I was like "Yeardley" like. I mean maybe? We were against the wall and she's like sitting there in the corner. Like if we were like this and I was like "Yeardley" like "what the fuck was that about, like that was bullshit that you would do that." Like possibly. I was like... such a bullshit move. "Why you're doing like that?... ["audible]

Investigator 1: Okay. She has a pretty good knot on her head. That's why I'm asking. How you could explain how that would have happened?

George Huguely: I mean, I don't even know. A knot?

Investigator 1: On the sided of her head, she's been hit pretty good right there. So I'm just trying to figure out did you hit her with something?

George Huguely: No. I never. Never touched her or struck her or anything...

Investigator 1: Well you touched her. You had your hands on her.

George Huguely: I said I never struck her. Never never at all like ...

Investigator 1: I'm trying to figure out why she has a black eye and why she's got a big lump right there.

George Huguely: I mean, we... were... I mean...

Investigator 1: So you don't know how it happened.

George Huguely: So she's got a black...

Investigator 1: It's fine It's fine. Um, So you. I'm going through this one more time and make sure we're on the same page. You're pretty pissed at her from a week ago for sending those text messages. Do you have those text messages where she said, as you said, "fucked" somebody?

George Huguely: I actually might have those, yeah.

Investigator 1: Alright, you got your phone with you?

George Huguely: Yeah.

Investigator 1: Let's pull that out so we can see those.

George Huguely: They were like, guess what you would call, one of these, which is, like an ongoing conversation with instant message.

Investigator 1: Okay. Alright. [moves his phone to the middle of table]

George Huguely: I'm sure there's emails that said she hooked up with somebody. I'm not lying about that...

Investigator 1: Do you own a home computer or laptop?

George Huguely: Yeah.

Investigator 1: Is that where all the emails are? Can you get to them on that? [gestures to phone]

George Huguely: Actually they're deleted off here. I can get to them though.

Investigator 1: That's fine. Um, so last week. You kinda broke up a while ago but are still talking. Last week you get pissed because she sends you that text so last night you went over there because you wanted to talk. So let's talk about how you...

George Huguely: Entered?

Investigator 1: Entered, yeah.

George Huguely: Yeah, I mean...

Investigator 1: Cause to put your fist through the door.

George Huguely: No. it was my leg.

Investigator 1: Your leg?

George Huguely: Leg I'm pretty sure. [he shows investigator his leg] kicked it

Investigator 1: You're right it is your leg. How'd you get the bruises on your hand then?

George Huguely: This is all from lacrosse. This is all...

Investigator 1: That seems pretty fresh right there [gestures to his arm/hand]

George Huguely: This is all from lacrosse game on Saturday. You can see where my arm pads are. Right here, my gloves right here...

Investigator 1: Right there? I thought you wore those padded gloves?

George Huguely: [showing bruises on arms] This is all defense, this is all from lacrosse, one hundred percent. This is where my arm pads are, and my gloves end here. This is all tanned because that's where gets sun, compared to like my legs [shows leg] the difference in color and that's, I got whacked. I remember one hundred percent. Got whacked when I was trying to ...

Investigator 1: When you had her and shaking her did she scratch you in anyway?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: No? She's a little girl, she's tiny.

George Huguely: No. She didn't scratch me.

Investigator 1: Hit you or anything like that?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: Okay, so you kick in the door.

George Huguely: Yeah, that's how I got in, yeah, yeah, and then I stuck my arm through and unlocked it. And then in there. Everything else is clear.

Investigator 1: What was she saying while you were kicking the door? Did you just go straight kick or did you knock first?

George Huguely: No, I knocked first. I was like “Yeardley, let me in”. And I think she said something like, that was like, I remember, that was like, I just don’t remember exactly what, I remember her saying something or whispering some shit or like, I don’t know. And I was like, Alright well. She knew, because I sent her emails. Like six emails that were like “we need to talk, I’m coming over to talk to you” and like, and she actually did respond to those. Actually She did respond to those. She was like “fuck you, I’m not talking to you” like something along those lines.

Investigator 1: Alright. How much have you had to drink tonight? Or last night?

George Huguely: Um, I had probably four or five beers on the golf course...

Investigator 1: That was earlier. Right?

George Huguely: That was earlier in the day. And I had two glasses of wine at dinner, and like three more beers afterwards. And like, four, three, afterwards I probably, after dinner I probably had like five beers combined.

Investigator 1: Okay, um. Did you smoke any weed?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: Any other drugs?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: What were you wearing last night?

George Huguely: I was wearing shorts and a tee shirt.

Investigator 1: That?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: What did the shorts and tee shirt look like?

George Huguely: They are on the floor in my room. They are cargo shorts and a tee shirt.

Investigator 1: Okay. What color are the cargo shorts?

George Huguely: Blue.

Investigator 1: And the tee shirt?

George Huguely: I think white. Yeah, I mean uh, a white tee shirt.

Investigator 1: Alright. We been through what all happened. When did you leave? Right after you went out the front door?

George Huguely: Yeah.

Investigator 1: Where did you go?

George Huguely: Home.

Investigator 1: Straight home?

George Huguely: Yeah.

Investigator 1: Talk to anybody?

George Huguely: No

Investigator 1: Call anybody?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: Call, you said she doesn’t have a phone.

George Huguely: No, she does not have a phone.

Investigator 1: Her phone at your house?

George Huguely: I believe, everybody looked for her phone, my roommate’s girlfriend looked for her phone, we have not, it’s not at our apartment.

Investigator 1: Okay. So, but you picked up her computer on the way out of her apartment.

George Huguely: Yeah.

Investigator 1: Anything else?

George Huguely: No no.

Investigator 1: Where are we going to find that computer at?

George Huguely: The computer is at... the dumpster maybe.

Investigator 1: So you threw her computer in the dumpster?

George Huguely: Yeah. The one right by 14th street. Wait no no, not the one by 14th street. It is the one right by the point.

Investigator 1: By the point?

George Huguely: There's an apartment complex [investigator 2 exiting door] On the way home I just tossed it in there...

Investigator 1: Okay

George Huguely: That's where the computer is...

Investigator 1: Alright. Did you toss anything else in there?

George Huguely: No no no.

Investigator 1: Okay. So what did you do when you got home?

George Huguely: I just went to bed.

Investigator 1: Anybody else home?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: No?

George Huguely: No no no.

Investigator 1: Then you just went to bed?

Investigator 1: You didn't take a shower or anything like that?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: No?

George Huguely: No. No at all.

Investigator 1: Did you happen to look at the clock before you lay down?

George Huguely: Nah, I did not. I mean I'm sorry. I went tired. I was...

Investigator 1: Alright, right. Okay. I'm going to let one of the detectives take you to the bathroom right quick. You want to take him to the bathroom?

Investigator 2: Not yet.

Investigator 1: Not yet. [investigators leave room]. They enter the room.

Investigator 1: Okay, yeah, Okay yeah. He's got some couple more questions for you.

Investigator 2: We can stop each one of us. I know we touched about what happened last night but sum it up for me. Lead up to it for me, how did you guys break up exactly? Why?

George Huguely: Why? Well we are, not, as the same we were before and I'm going... well she wants to move to New York and I'm not exactly sure what I'm doing yet but wanna go to San Francisco. And um so we've been like talking about this. Found a text message in my phone from another girl and then we broke up because of that. So like, an ongoing type deal...

Investigator 2: Cause funny that you mention putting your hands around her neck and holding her back that way. Is that another reason you two broke up? And the arguments, any past physical violence?

George Huguely: Um, that happened...

Investigator 2: Keep in mind, before we talked to you we've talked to other people too.

George Huguely: No, I understand that. I mean, that night that she found the text messages in my phone, I was more drunk than I probably have ever been. And she did the same thing like yelling at me and hitting me and I'm drunk. And I actually laid on her, like detained on her kind of, and she ended up leaving but that happened that night...

Investigator 2: How did you detain her?

George Huguely: I mean, sir, like that night I was...

Investigator 2: Did you get off of her yourself or did other people have to get you off of her?

George Huguely: Uh, I, I really don't remember that night...at all.

Investigator 2: Never?

George Huguely: No at all.

Investigator 2: may be you smashed her that night. May be choked her a little bit?

George Huguely: Nah, I don't think I choked her. She never said I choked her. She said I laid on her and held her. And ...

Investigator 2: How did you lay down on her?

George Huguely: She said I literally like laid on her.

Investigator 2: Was she face down or face up?

George Huguely: I don't even know. Like, we've hung out since that night. A bunch of times. Like actually, probably a dozen times since that night and we haven't really talked about that. But since that night, like she's never said that like I was choking her or anything. She said I literally like laid on her and like that way...

Investigator 2: She's about what? 105-110 lbs isn't it? soaking wet? You're almost double her size.

George Huguely: Yeah. Probably.

Investigator 2: What? you don't think would maybe be enough to take the breath out of her if you're laying down on top of her?

George Huguely: I mean, I never thought about it like that. I never like hurt, never like hurt her...

Investigator 2: We never mentioned anything about her in the face and you constantly say you didn't punch her in the face. We haven't even asked you that question.

George Huguely: I know ...

Investigator 2: Did you smack her like "snap out of it?". Like that ...

George Huguely: No no. I did not.

Investigator 2: Not like that?

George Huguely: No. I never. I'm in here for assault charges that's why I assumed...

Investigator 1: No, I never told you we had any warrants on you. I said you were detained.

George Huguely: I know but someone said "you're here for an assault investigation". So I have mixed ...

Investigator 2: Have you ever threatened any harm to her?

George Huguely: No, no...

Investigator 2: Why'd you take her computer?

George Huguely: I don't know

Investigator 2: Maybe because there's evidence on the computer of emails you sent?

George Huguely: No. You can find, you can read all of the emails back and forth. Like...

Investigator 2: There's no threats or anything on the computer if we bring forensically one. They came from George "Hey, you know what, I found out you're cheating on me"?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 2: Nothing like that?

George Huguely: No, No, nothing, nothing.

Investigator 2: Why'd you take that computer then?

George Huguely: I, you could look at my computer and see emails that are on my computer that are on her computer. Emails are It's not like her email account is erased because I took her computer. I have no idea why I took the computer. Probably because she was like not talking to me, and not like, she's did like all this stuff and I just walked out of there with her computer.

Investigator 2: Why would this little girl just for no reason start attacking you out of the blue?

George Huguely: You could ask my friends I was with that night...

Investigator 2: yeah that night?

George Huguely: Um, you can, I wish, I have four, three eye witnesses for that one. She walked in and started punching me in the face, hitting me with her purse, hitting me with her cellphone. And literally when I stood up and backed away it was like, to the other, "you got to stop, get away from me, get away from me" she came, she kept coming back for more.

Investigator 2: Okay. No violence. Right?

George Huguely: No, sir. I'm not lying. Like, you can look through all the emails. You can look at everything.

Investigator 2: So would you break that door down?

George Huguely: Because I wanted to, I said it...

Investigator 2: No. It's more than that man, that's rage, the way that door is kicked in. That was pure rage. You must have been seriously mad.

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: You've told us everything else. You were mad.

George Huguely: I've told you guys everything. I'm not hiding anything. I've told you everything.

Investigator 2: Then why kick the door in? That's just pure rage.

George Huguely: I wanted to talk to her, I wanted to talk to her, I wanted to talk to her...

Investigator 1: Have you always been that way with her? As far as if she didn't want to do something it was kind of your way or the highway type of thing?

George Huguely: No, no.

Investigator 1: No?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 2: I understand you had a lot of alcohol in you last night, okay? Do you think that maybe could have lead you to, why you, fed your emotions to kick in that door?

George Huguely: That that may have have have made me rationalize kicking in the door to open it up. But it was all strictly to go in there and talk to her. I wanted to talk to her. I told her, I sent emails, you can see the emails, you can see everything. Said "we need to talk about this", I sent like three emails like "I want to come talk to you" then like "fuck yourself". I should not have gone over there when like, when I was drinking. But like that, that made me emotional so I wanted to go talk to her. That's why I kicked to the door. That's why I was trying. I wanted to talk to her.

Investigator 2: I know you mentioned you fell on her a week ago, right? When you were laying on her.

George Huguely: No. That was, that was ...

Investigator 2: a month ago?

George Huguely: a month ago

Investigator 2: When you detained her, right? Did you detain last night at all?

George Huguely: No ...

Investigator 2: Did you fall down on top of her wrestling?

George Huguely: We were wrestling on the ground for a little bit...

Investigator 2: Did you wrestle on the bed at all?

George Huguely: Nah, nah, never like, nah, never like. Maybe I shook her?

Investigator 2: No I mean like hold her down until she calmed down a bit?

George Huguely: No, if anything if anything it would be more...

Investigator 2: I'm sure you didn't want to hurt her. That way if you were restraining her she wouldn't be able to hurt herself as much.

George Huguely: I never laid on her or any of that. Like, when we were on the floor, when her nose started bleeding, like wrestled around, that's when her nose started bleeding.

Investigator 2: Was it pretty noisy when you guys were wrestling around?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: Was she screaming?

George Huguely: No. No. No. She was, no. She was not screaming, actually.

Investigator 2: If I'm cracking my head in the wall, I'm going to be saying ow.

George Huguely: Yeah. No, I mean she was not screaming. She should have been. Probably, I mean maybe, I don't know.

Investigator 1: Why do you think she should have been?

George Huguely: I don't know. I mean, well, she was screaming when I first, like, came in the room. She was like "no, I'm not talking to you. Get the fuck out of here" and all that. But like, that was it.

Investigator 1: When um, at any point before you said you, and this was your words, you tossed her on the bed and then you left.

George Huguely: Yeah

Investigator 1: At any point before that, did she lose consciousness?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: Okay. What happened after you tossed her on the bed? Did she move? Talk about, say something?

George Huguely: I mean, I literally tossed her on the bed and turned around...

Investigator 1: Tossed her on the bed or tossed her on the floor?

George Huguely: On the bed and walked out the door.

Investigator 1: Did she have on, did she still have her tee-shirt on at that point?

George Huguely: Uh, yeah. Uh. She, yeah, I mean she never, she only had her tee shirt on the entire time. She never had, she never was not, unclothed.

Investigator 1: So you didn't sexually assault her or anything?

George Huguely: No, no no no, no!

Investigator 1: Okay. I have to ask.

George Huguely: I'm sorry I'm sorry I apologize.

Investigator 1: When you tossed her on her bed was she on her back or her stomach?

George Huguely: I mean, I think she was on her back I'm not sure. I mean I was like, you know...

Investigator 1: I asked you earlier about the light. 'Cause if she's kinda in bed maybe the lights were off. Were the lights on? Did you turn them on?

George Huguely: The lights were...

Investigator 1: For you to be able to see?

George Huguely: The lights were not on.

Investigator 1: How did you see the blood and stuff coming out her nose?

George Huguely: Because she has a big bay window by her room and there's lights from the parking lot. And I mean, it's not hard, it's easy to see.

Investigator 1: Okay, so when you toss her back on the bed she's bleeding. You said she was bleeding out her nose and you didn't feel you needed to call rescue?

George Huguely: No.

Investigator 1: After banging her head, and shaking her and blood coming out of her nose on the floor?

George Huguely: No, I mean, it was...

Investigator 1: Let me ask you this, did you um, and you've been honest so far so there's really no reason for you not to, to lie about anything, when you left out of there were you kinda like "you got what you deserved" and that's why you didn't call 911?

George Huguely: No, no no no no. It wasn't about that for me. It was about going to talk to her. It was nothing about...

Investigator 1: You miss anything you want to ask him about right now?

George Huguely: There's nothing about going to get anything, or going, you know. I don't know. I took the computer and that was irrational but that was like my collateral if you could look at it like that, that's where my logic was at, but that was just ...

Investigator 1: Well I have to tell you something.

Investigator 2: I think I know why you took that computer.

George Huguely: Cause why, do you think?

Investigator 1: She's dead. You killed her George. You killed her.

George Huguely: She's dead?

Investigator 1: I think you knew that already.

George Huguely: No, I did not. She's dead? How the fuck is she dead?

Investigator 1: Because you killed her.

George Huguely: How the fuck is she dead?

Investigator 1: 'Cause you killed her George.

George Huguely: Oh my god.

Investigator 2: We're not here for any reason, George.

George Huguely: [Head down pulling hair] She's dead?

Investigator 1: Yes.

George Huguely: She's dead?

Investigator 1: Yes.

George Huguely: She's dead?

Investigator 1: She's dead.

George Huguely: How? How?

Investigator 1: I already told you how and you already told us how as well.

George Huguely: How she died?

Investigator 1: You just told us.

George Huguely: How is she dead? How is she dead? I didn't strangle her, I didn't do any, I didn't fucking hit her. [whispers "how the fuck is she dead"] I don't even know. I don't. She's dead?

Investigator 2: Yes.

George Huguely: How the fuck is she dead? Oh my god.

Investigator 2: We're serious George. That's why you took the computer, isn't it?

George Huguely: No!

Investigator 2: Because you had threats to kill her on that from a past email because she hooked up with a player from UNC.

George Huguely: I never, I said that, I never, that was just like the heat of the moment, it was heat of the moment. Yeah...

Investigator 2: Last night was heat of the moment too, wasn't it? You went in there to talk with her and it got out of control. Right George? The alcohol got ahold of you? You kicked in her door, she started to fight with you, you punched her in the head or you cracked her head in the window or in the wall.

George Huguely: She's not dead, She's not dead.

Investigator 2: She is, I aint B.S.ing you. Right now it's serious.

George Huguely: I want to see, I want to see her. She's not dead.

Investigator 1: George, She. Is. Dead.

Investigator 2: You're not here to dance with us. You're here because she's dead. The alcohol has...

George Huguely: I don't believe it, I don't believe it. I didn't, I didn't, I didn't, I didn't hurt her.

Investigator 2: Listen to me, listen to me, listen to me. You probably didn't mean to hurt her.

George Huguely: I didn't hurt her.

Investigator 2: You went in there, you kicked the door, she got a little feisty, you either punched her or smacked her head into the concrete and then you held her down under a pillow because that's...

George Huguely: No, I didn't hold her under a pillow I was never on the bed.

Investigator 2: Okay then.

George Huguely: I never held her down, I never, I never suffocated her, I never did anything. I don't believe that she's dead. I don't believe that she's dead. I don't believe that she's dead.

Investigator 2: Did you punch her did you...

George Huguely: How, there's no way that she's dead. She's not dead. I never did anything that she could be dead.

Investigator 2: Listen to me listen to me, listen to me. Did you punch her or...?

George Huguely: No. I never, I never, No.

Investigator 2: Did you hold her head into the wall? Did you crack it?

George Huguely: No. Is her head cracked?!

Investigator 2: Did you smack her head into the wall?

George Huguely: No, she's not dead, she's not dead. You guys said she had a black eye and a bump on her head.

Investigator 1: She has those things.

George Huguely: But she's, she's, she's not dead. I didn't, I didn't, I didn't, I did not...

Investigator 1: Let's calm down.

George Huguely: I did not like hurt her. Like, She's not dead.

Investigator 1: Calm down there, George, okay?

George Huguely: Tell me she's not dead. Tell me she's not dead. Tell me she's not dead.

Investigator 1: I want you to calm down right now, okay?

George Huguely: I don't believe it, I don't believe it. I never did anything that could do that to her...

Investigator 1: Let's calm down, okay

George Huguely: I never did anything that could do this to her I swear to God. Never did anything that could do that to her. I never, no. I refuse to believe that she's dead. There's no way that anything that happened last night could kill her.

Investigator 2: Okay. Well, just out of protocol I need you to stand up for me and put your hands behind your back.

George Huguely: [stands up and puts arms behind back, handcuffs put on]

Investigator 1: Relax

Investigator 2: Relax, it will be fine.

George Huguely: Tell me she's not dead, tell me she's not dead, no, please. Will you tell me she's not dead?

Investigator 1: Relax

George Huguely: Please will you tell me she's not dead?

Investigator 1: You know what, I wish I could tell you that George. Twenty two years old. Twenty two and her life is done.

George Huguely: Oh my god. Kill me.

George Huguely: anything that could do that. I did not do anything that could have killed her.

Investigator 1: You do realize you are under arrest?

George Huguely: I realize that.

Investigator 1: Alright. We're going to contact the commonwealth attorney on the proper charge but it's going to be related to her death.

George Huguely: She's dead? How? There's no way. Oh my god. There's no way she would be dead. There's no way, oh my God, there's no way. There's no way, there's no way, there's no way. I don't believe it.

Investigator 2: It's true.

George Huguely: I don't believe it. How?

Investigator 2: Help us understand what happened last night, George. Start over from the beginning.

George Huguely: I'm not lying to you. Everything I said to you was so true. I'm not lying to you about anything.

Investigator 2: She had a tee shirt on?

George Huguely: Yeah. I am most confident I think, I'm pretty sure, yeah. Was her tee-shirt not on when...

Investigator 1: We're not going to tell you that

Investigator 2: Help us understand what happened last night, George. Go over it again.

George Huguely: I told you everything. I told you everything. I, I, I don't, I don't even believe it yet. I do not believe it. I do not believe it. I don't believe it.

Investigator 2: Okay.

Investigator 1: Just a second [stands up and leaves]

George Huguely: But there's no way. There's no way sir. Sir, there's no way she's dead. There's no way. There's no way, there's no way.

Investigator 2: It's true, George.

George Huguely: How? How? There's no. There's no way. There's no way she could be dead.

Investigator 2: Why do you think you're sitting here in hand cuffs?

George Huguely: For, for, for, maybe what you guys said were assault charges?

Investigator 2: She's dead, Okay. I'm not lying to you.

George Huguely: You would have said murder charges if you were lying, if you were honest you would have said murder charges.

Investigator 2: She was assaulted.

George Huguely: You would have said murder charges.

Investigator 2: That resulted in her death.

George Huguely: You would have said I murdered her. You would have said I murdered. Did she die this morning? Afterwards?

Investigator 2: I can't tell you that.

George Huguely: I know but listen I didn't murder her [stomps foot] I didn't murder her. I didn't. I know she's not dead. I know she's not dead, I know she's not dead, I know she's not dead, I know she's not dead. There's no way she's dead.

Investigator 2: Calm down, George.

George Huguely: There's no way she's dead. There's no way. There can't be any way she's dead from any, there can't be any way she's dead. I'm telling you, there's no way she's dead. You have to be lying to me. Tell me you're lying to me, tell me you're lying to me, tell me you're lying to me. How's she dead?

Investigator 2: I'm not lying to you.

George Huguely: How is she dead? How is she dead? How? What did she die from?

Investigator 2: Well, we're going to find out.

George Huguely: What did she die from?

Investigator 2: We're going to find out. I can't make that determination.

George Huguely: Sir, Sir...

Investigator 2: Either head trauma or asphyxiation.

George Huguely: There was no asphyxiation.

Investigator 1: Okay.

George Huguely: Oh my God, oh my God, oh my God.

Investigator 2: And I know you told me the truth but I think there are some part you're leaving out.

George Huguely: Nah, sir.

Investigator 2: How did she get all of that head trauma?

George Huguely: From banging.

Investigator 2: I don't believe that. I don't believe she banged her own head in the wall.

George Huguely: When we were wrestling, I don't believe she's dead. I don't believe she's dead. There's no way she's dead. There's no way she's dead. She has to be alive, she has to be alive, she has to. There's no way. She wasn't. There's no way. There's no way. The last I saw her she was not dead, she was not dead.

Investigator 2: What was she doing the last time you saw her?

George Huguely: She was like, she was like standing up with me. She was standing up with me. She was standing up with me, looking at me.

Investigator 2: Was she standing or were you holding her?

George Huguely: She was standing up looking at me. I don't believe it, I do not believe it. I don't believe it, I don't believe it. Sir, I don't believe it. Sir, Sir, please tell me you're lying.

Investigator 2: I'm not lying. She's dead.

George Huguely: How is she dead? How? How? How?

Investigator 2: That's what I wanted you to clarify.

George Huguely: How? How?

Investigator 2: You know how.

George Huguely: No, I didn't know. No, no, no. No, I didn't know. No, no, no.

Investigator 2: Why didn't you know?

George Huguely: She's not dead, she's not dead. She's not dead, I know she's not dead. [cries with head down] She isn't dead.

Investigator 2: I know it got out of control last night, George.

George Huguely: She's not dead. She's not dead. She's not dead. I know one hundred [crying] I didn't [crying] She cannot be dead. You're not lying to me either, are you? You're not lying to me. She's dead? Oh my God.

Investigator 2: I know it got out of hand, George.

George Huguely: It didn't, it didn't, it didn't, it didn't, it didn't, it didn't, it did not, it didn't, it didn't, I...

Investigator 2: Then what happened?

George Huguely: I didn't kill her. I did not kill her. I did not kill her. I did not. I did not. I did not kill her.

Investigator 2: Did you smack her head one time too hard?

George Huguely: I never hit her, no. I laid her on the ground.

Investigator 2: Did you smack her head then lay her on the bed so she could kind of relax?

George Huguely: No, no, no, no, no, no, no, no, no, no...

Investigator 2: Well you didn't punch her because I don't think you would have done that.

George Huguely: No, no, no, no. I still do not believe it. Sir, I don't believe it, I don't believe it, I don't believe it. You came in and said you were filing an assault charge and that makes sense but that doesn't even make sense. That doesn't even make sense.

Investigator 2: She was assaulted and she died.

George Huguely: No way, no way, no way, no way, no way.

Investigator 2: And you were there, this happened while you were there. This is the time to man up, George. Tell me what happened.

George Huguely: I told you what happened, I told you what happened, I told you what happened.

Investigator 2: Then what happened again?

George Huguely: I told you what happened, I told you what happened.

Investigator 1: It got out of control.

George Huguely: It didn't. I told you what happened. It didn't get out of control. She's not dead, she's not dead, she's not dead. There's no way she's dead. There's no way! I didn't do! No way! There's no way!

Appendix B: Bryan Greenwell Police Interrogation

<https://criminalwords.net/2019/09/11/bryan-greenwell-interrogation-transcript/>

Investigator: Hey Bryan, what's happenin' man?

Bryan Greenwell: What's happenin'?

Investigator: My name is detective Royce. Sorry it took me a little while to get over here.

Investigator: Talking to Jodie.

Bryan Greenwell: Jodie?

Investigator: Mm-hm.

Bryan Greenwell: How she been doing?

Investigator: She's a little upset.

Bryan Greenwell: About what?

Investigator: Well, that's what we're here to talk about. She's a little upset, um... I want to tell you that she, I'm trying to remember her exact words but it was more along the lines of "I don't want to tell him, I don't want him to be scared, and uh, to talk to us." Anything else along that. "Cause I want to, I want to go talk to him", I said "I can't let you do that, I may be able to let you do a recorded statement or write a note but"

Bryan Greenwell: So she wrote one down?

Investigator: I have a recording. Also, I have another recording that I would like you to review as well but I can't ask you any questions yet because you're in custody for something else. I don't know. I know it's some kind of dope charge, I know you did some stuff there. So before I actually ask you anything, tell you or show you anything, I have to read you your rights. You've had those read before, correct?

Bryan Greenwell: No.

Investigator: You've never had your rights read?!

Bryan Greenwell: No. I mean, when I was younger, yeah.

Investigator: Alright so you know what I'm talking about.

Bryan Greenwell: I know what you're talking about, yeah.

Investigator: Well, I'm going to go through this, and I brought a picture of your kiddos. [places photo of children on table in front of Greenwell] I gave her a picture of them, too. Alright before we ask you any questions you must understand your rights. You have the right to remain silent. Anything you say can and will be used against you in court of law. Right to talk to a lawyer prior to questioning or making any statements, have them present with you while being questioned. Can't afford to hire a lawyer, one will be appointed by the court to represent you before any questions if you desire one. You may stop the questioning or making statements at any time by refusing to answer further or requesting to consult with an attorney prior to continuing questioning or making statements. Those are your rights. And the second part of this form is just a waiver of your rights and basically says that "I read the statement of rights or had them read to me. I understand what my rights are and I'm willing to make a statement and answer some questions. I don't want a lawyer at this time and I understand what I am doing. No promises or threats have been made, no pressure or coercion of any kind. You understand what coercion means, correct? [Greenwell nods] Okay, um. And I'm guessing you might have an idea what [Greenwell shakes head "no"] You don't have an idea of what you might want to talk to me about?

Bryan Greenwell: No.

Investigator: Or what I want to talk to you about? Okay. And it has to do with the apartment you guys used to live at over on Shelby Street.

Bryan Greenwell: Oh, well, yeah....

Investigator: Does that ring a bell? That incident?

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah.

Investigator: What do you know about that incident?

Bryan Greenwell: As far as I know, that was supposed to be us, as far as my understanding. Just the guy, Terry Payne [spelling?] that uh, he was supposed to send somebody over to talk to us or something like that. I don't know, 'cause they said, well I know the guy too you know, they said something like that. And I'm not even sure if it's him, you know what I'm sayin'? I'm just going off of what I've heard. That he got ripped off for some dope a few times. He got upset about it and the only reason why he wouldn't come confront her by herself was because of me. Well, she never ripped him off for no dope anyways. It wasn't her, it was...

Investigator: So this was geared towards Jodie, is that what you're telling me?

Bryan Greenwell: Yes. And as far as I know somebody was supposed to send some people from Chicago, some black dudes. Said it's not about the money now, it's not about the dope, it's about the principle. And he, Terry Payne [spelling?] told me this, and I told him I said "you better go back and tell them got no principle it seems like I'm just fucking around with my fiancée and it pulls me, you know what I'm saying? I'm involved. And he said "sorry, too late, the call's been made and that uh, people from .. what'd he say? New Orleans or something like that, up in Louisiana up here looking for her. That's when I noticed we started getting followed. And I'm like "hold up, you know maybe this shit is true". I've been thinking it's all, you know how people talkin' just trying to scare somebody. And I kept noticing people following me and kept noticing people following me. And I'm like "hold the fuck up" you know? So I made a phone call and was like "dude, what the fucks going on?" He said "man" he said "I told you I would try to go talk to them". I said "dude, you already tried to go talk to them and for the past, I don't know, month and a half, something like that, every time I walked out the door I was being followed". And for the life of me, nobody believed me. And I mean, I told everybody. I said "man, somebody is following us. Somebody is following me or somebody is following you. Somebody." Then I got locked up.

Investigator: What happened with that, a little.

Bryan Greenwell: That ...

Investigator: I'm not the dope police.

Bryan Greenwell: I mean not one time did nobody ever say "police", nobody said, I mean the whole time I told everybody I was being followed. I mean, I had people run up on me, I'd take off. Nobody ever said "cops" you know? So I don't know if it's the cops or if it was them or whoever, whatever. You know what I'm saying? I'm like "shit", so I done what I do. What I know best- protect myself and get the hell out of that situation for a moment. But that situation it was same thing. Two cars whipped up on me, then once I took off, yeah, he hit his lights. I'm like "I got a set of lights, which I do. You know what I'm saying? I got a flashlight that turns. You know what I'm saying? You click it one time and it starts flashing, you know what I mean, red, white, red, blue, the lights. You know what I'm saying? So I'm like "no one's ever said 'stop, police, this is the local, feds" whoever. You know what I'm saying? So I didn't stop. Even when we got back to the house we were staying at, not one time did anybody say "police", "this is the police", the whoever, blah blah. They just told me to get the fuck down or they would blow my damn brains out. I'm like "well uh" there's a chance I got to take. Either they're the police, and then once they started all coming up on me I noticed it was the police because all the equipment and shit like that. And I was like "well, maybe this is the cops" so I got down.

Investigator: Who all did you get arrested with that night?

Bryan Greenwell: Me, Jodie, Lala, and Chris.

Investigator: Does Lala have a real name? Everybody keeps saying Lala. Cause I'm not the dope police, I'm just curious

Bryan Greenwell: It's uh, Laura. It's Laura. I don't know her last name.

Investigator: And it really doesn't matter for me. I'm just curious because everyone says "Lala" and I'm like, "last time someone was named 'LaLa' was on a kids T.V. show" [laughter] Alright. Let me take you back to that apartment on Shelby. How long did ya'll stay there?

Bryan Greenwell: Man, I can't, I just got out of jail. I don't know if she had that before I went in, or before right before I got out, or what. I think I was only there a couple weeks, maybe? Something like that. Maybe a little longer. I know it was like between two, two weeks. Two to three weeks. Something like that.

Investigator: And you guys never went back to that apartment?

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah, we went back.

Investigator: You did?

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah. We went back and got some of our stuff. I mean, we've seen the landlord and nothing was ever said. We've seen cops sitting there and nothing was ever said to us. And I was thinking "well, this aint got nothing to do with us, I hope"

Investigator: Did you know those neighbors? Ya'll never, you ever seen them before?

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah, we've seen them in passing....

Investigator: If I showed you a picture of them, would you know who they are?

Bryan Greenwell: Pretty sure I would be.

Investigator: [shows photos]

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah, yeah, that was her. Now the guy?

Investigator: Now this is a little older picture. I think he had probably just got done. His hair may have been a lot longer.

Bryan Greenwell: Hm, yeah. If you put long hair on him it looks like him.

Investigator: So you all didn't have any interaction with them?

Bryan Greenwell: Nah, other than I mean, passing in the hallways or, it was just, I think it was what? One, two, two [crosstalk] yeah. Because it was the front room, it was like a little storage or something like that. The back room was supposedly where he stored all his stuff for, I guess, the strip clubs that he owned or something. I don't know.

Investigator: Mm-Hm. It was strip clubs, you're right. Alright, um, what do you actually know about what happened over there? What have you heard? What do you know?

Bryan Greenwell: I just heard that somebody got shot, somebody got killed or something like that. Then we stayed away for a couple days because that's when I found out that supposedly they were there for her, and us, you know what I'm saying? It was supposed to be us. I was like, you know, um, we made the decision to stay away for a couple of days because hell, somebody wanted to talk to her they, the landlord knew her phone number, her cell phone number, knew her name, everything else. Nobody ever tried to contact us. At least, as far as I know, nobody ever tried to contact us. Which I mean the house, the apartment wasn't even, it was her apartment, wasn't in my name, or nothing like that.

Investigator: Right. Alright. Did you know that there were two victims there? Did you know that?

Bryan Greenwell: No.

Investigator: Both of those two people I showed you.

Bryan Greenwell: No, they told me it was just the.. uh.. lady.

Investigator: Well, both of them were shot. And uh, this is what I want to show you.

[Investigator moves laptop over to Greenwell and moves his chair closer]

Investigator: He didn't die.

Voice on recording: Do you remember; do you know your neighbors next door? Did you know who they were? If I showed you pictures of your neighbors would you know who they were? Where your neighbors involved in any of this? You recognize her? That Jodie? Your Neighbor?

Investigator: So. That's just the start of it but

Bryan Greenwell: Okay, well let's finish it.

Investigator: No, I got a, I got a couple follow ups here.

Bryan Greenwell: Okay.

Investigator: When I showed Jodie this, she lost it.

Bryan Greenwell: She lost it like?

Investigator: Bawling crying, broke down.

Bryan Greenwell: Let me guess, said that we done it.

Investigator: She did.

Bryan Greenwell: Well...

Investigator: And before you know, I am going to tell her the same thing I told her, I said "ya'll have some important things in front of you." I said, "bad things happen to good people. Sometimes people get put into situations and shit didn't go as planned." Um, I believe that's what happened here. I don't think there was malicious intent going in. I think things escalated and went bad. I told her I wanted to help her try to get to the good side of this and to not paint her into a negative light on it. And I said, I told her, I said I will give you that same opportunity and tell you the same things that I have told you both the exact same things. And that's how I want to present it. I don't bullshit people, I'll tell you what I've got. I mean...

Bryan Greenwell: Fair enough.

Investigator: I mean, I got a living victim that puts you there. I've got Jodie who says you were there. Now I want to hear from you, what in the world happened. Like I said, I think something went wrong, I don't think you got there on

Bryan Greenwell: I want to hear the rest of it. What Jodie had to say.

Investigator: What Jodie had to say? I don't have Jodie on video.

Bryan Greenwell: I thought you said you had her on

Investigator: I have it on an audio recording. I just did it. I don't have it on a disk yet. I still have it on an actual recorder.

Bryan Greenwell: Can I hear it?

Investigator: Let me see if I can do that. I don't even know if I can do that. It's on this recorder that's in my pocket right now. The same one I have on right now.

Bryan Greenwell: Well, lets find out if we can do that because, I mean...

Investigator: Is that going to change...

Bryan Greenwell: Nah man, I want to

Investigator: I'm not going to play it word for word for you so you can hear her story.

Bryan Greenwell: No no no.

Investigator: I've been doing this a little longer than that.

Bryan Greenwell: I don't I don't expect you to do that either but I would like to know what she's saying...

Investigator: I can give you the, I can give you the details of, I guess the general of what she's said. Is that, and he goes on to say that, they were involved in a domestic situation. Then apparently, he may have been getting the best of her, and she came over for help. You guys go back to their apartment, it happened inside their apartment, you guys intervened on the good side of this to start with, trying to help her out. And things went bad from there. Does that sound, is that a fair statement of how things may have occurred?

Bryan Greenwell: No. I mean...

Investigator: It's not?

Bryan Greenwell: No. I had no. Yeah, I know these people. I don't know them personally. You know what I'm saying? I know them from that apartment. And yes, we did go over there. But, that's it. I mean hell, if you finger print the place you can find my fingerprints on a couple things because where I walked in the room. I kind of picked some stuff up, you know, because it was laying everywhere so I was like [noises from cuffs on table while he demonstrates moving stuff over] I mean, other than that.

Investigator: Alright. I know right now you're trying to figure out where to go with this. Because I don't want you to start digging yourself a hole.

Bryan Greenwell: I know what you want me to do is to commit, you know, say...

Investigator: Oh, I don't need you to, I don't need you to. I got, you know, I've got Jodie's statement. I have enough to walk out of this room right now. What I'm trying to do is try to give you an opportunity to do the same thing she just did which is go at it with the angle "we were trying to help and things just went bad". That's a whole lot better than just not making a statement and me just going off him. I mean, you think I put a guy who's paralyzed from the neck down on a ventilator with an interview like this up to twelve people on a jury that they're not going to sympathize with him instead of you? I'll take that all day long, twice on Sunday.

Bryan Greenwell: Well, you know I'm looking at it too, I'm like "yeah as it stands right now, I mean, regardless of what I say right now, I'm fucked in this situation.

Investigator: And I'm trying to say there's a little bit of an out right here to make it better on you to not make it look like... I don't believe you're a cold blooded killer. You know? I don't believe that at all. Nothing suggests that to me. I think you're a smart guy that got involved with a situation you probably shouldn't have. Not saying that you shouldn't help somebody out but I'm saying shit went bad real quick. And I don't think anybody should be judged on one thing alone, there should be a whole series of events that happened here that get to basically where we are right now. And I just want you to think about a lot of different things. And I know I've thrown a lot at you at one time, you know. And I, I, and I can't say I understand where you're at right now because I haven't been there but I can sympathize with you.

Bryan Greenwell: I do this every time.

Investigator: What do you mean you do this every time?

Bryan Greenwell: I always try to protect everybody. You get that recorder off for a minute so I can ask you a question?

Investigator: This? Yeah. [shuts laptop]

Bryan Greenwell: And the one in there.

[turns off recorder in pocket and shows Greenwell]

Bryan Greenwell: Nothing else recording, right?

Investigator: I don't know about this room, this is the corrections room so I would have to say, well, I don't know.

Bryan Greenwell: What happens if I go with, I mean 'cause I know the story here, you know what I'm saying? I know the whole thing, what happened

[electronic beep]

Bryan Greenwell: What was that?

Investigator: I'm guessing I just got an email 'cause this is my actual work computer.

Bryan Greenwell: Well, look, how do I get Jodie off of all of this?

Investigator: I mean, I think, I think she's the least copiable of anything that happened. You know, I think she was just there. Um, and what he says and what she says really jive in line with the support, they support each other in their statements. Um, but I mean honestly it's just

going through the story, and I think I know the story. If I tell you the story, would it sound anything like what I started it off as. A domestic thing that you guys got involved in, you end up in a fight, with them with a gun and it goes off, and I can't tell you any more than that because, you know. By any chance, does that seem like a story that, of what may have happened?

Bryan Greenwell: Yep.

Investigator: You see; we can work with that because the beginning part of it. Because there's a big difference between you going in and saying "I'm going to f*** kill somebody" and you going in "I'm trying to help somebody" and then shit goes bad. There's, That's way different things there that we're talking about. And one's a whole lot better than the other. I mean, the end result was that people lost their lives, yes. But it's a whole lot different when it comes to juries, when talking about charges. You know, those types of things. It's a night and day situation.

Bryan Greenwell: I would say. Yeah. Like you say, ya'll would paint me out to be the fucking, wow. I mean, as it stands right now, which is those two saying that shit, you all got enough to convict me on anything...

Investigator: And that's what I'm saying. I'm not going to bullshit you. I told you that. I got enough right now, I could walk out of the room but that's not what I want to do because I believe in getting everybody a fair shot at this. Minimum is 18 years. You know, I don't bullshit when I talk to people. I don't play that whole mind game or running in circles and we talk for six hours. That's how you run a guy. I tell you what I got, I tell you how good, I'm not going to lie if I got something that's weak. I'm gonna be like "Hey, this is what I got, here's your chances, fifty fifty." This is not a fifty fifty chance kinda thing right here, I tell you that.

Bryan Greenwell: No it's a "screwed me all the way around"

Investigator: That's why I'm trying to give you, I want you to see how I'm trying to let you get out in front of it. Tell your part of the story on it.

Bryan Greenwell: Is there any way I could smoke a cigarette?

Investigator: I think we could probably make that happen. We let everybody, everybody else smoke one in the basement. When we come back, finish up the story? I think we could do that. Sit back for a minute. See what we could do for you.

Bryan Greenwell: Uh, regardless of what happens you all can't ... never mind.

Investigator: I think I know what you're trying to get out and you don't want anything to happen to Jodie on this. Does that sound about right?

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah.

Investigator: And I really think that's going to depend on a lot about what we talk about, what you tell me on this. I think we can minimize her involvement

Investigator: Well, I mean like, she is there. I mean, have you ever heard of about, uh, doing a bank robbery.

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah.

Investigator: You're the robber, you go in and rob the store. I'm just the driver. We both get in a car chase and get caught down the way. What charge do I get?

Bryan Greenwell: Accessory

Investigator: What charge do you get? It's a robbery.

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah.

Investigator: I mean, she's there with you. So she is a complicit, she's complicit in this. And not including that, there's nothing done on her behalf to help, or stay, or call or anything. So that's her little bit of a problem but her involvement is minimal.

Bryan Greenwell: Its, she did try to.

Investigator: What did she try to do?

Bryan Greenwell: Tried to help.

Investigator: After they were shot? What did she try to do? I mean, this helps her.

Bryan Greenwell: We'll talk, we'll talk about it all here in a second. Let me calm down.

Investigator: Okay. Okay. I'll give you some time, you know, get your stuff in order. See if I can set up that cigarette.

Bryan Greenwell: I appreciate it, thanks.

Investigator: Alright.

[Investigator opens door and talking with someone else]

Bryan Greenwell: A glass of water or somethin',

Investigator: Yeah.

[Investigator returns to room]

Investigator: Alright, we're gonna...

Bryan Greenwell: Hey, is Jodie still down there?

Investigator: No, they already took her back to CCC.

Other person: Is there like a count or something they need to do at a certain time or something? I don't know.

Investigator: We're going to go, soon as he comes back here, we're going to go down, downstairs. We're not going to talk about anything we talked about in here. Just going to be for you to smoke, get your thoughts together, okay? then we'll come back in here and talk some more, some questions.

[Investigator and Greenwell leave room- brief conversation with other person]

[Investigator and Greenwell return]

Investigator: Shoot it to me, I want to hear it. You know, I've talked to some other people, I know it's been bothering you. Everybody has said that you have been acting different. It's really been bothering you. So it's been noticeable to other people. Take that weight off, throw it on me. Get it off your shoulders, man.

Bryan Greenwell: I mean, ya'll, aren't going to try to hit me with no fucking death penalty or nothing

Investigator: No, there's no aggravated circumstances.

Bryan Greenwell: Well, try to get this done as quick as possible. Cause I'll be honest with ya, I can't sit in that jail.

Investigator: I understand.

Bryan Greenwell: Jodie didn't have nothing to do with it. She did try to get help for her, I mean I even did try but ... She comes over there and says he's over there beatin' on her. So we walked over there. We didn't even walk in the apartment at first. I was like, you know, "what's going on?" Jodie didn't even go over there at first. She was like "you go over there and see what". Said "yeah". Dude was over there throwing shit, breaking shit, cussing her. All three of us were standing outside, even the girl was standing outside, you know what I'm saying, and I was like "look, just leave or come over here, something", you know what I'm saying, "or I'm gonna call the cops". She went back inside and he grabbed ahold of her or something like that. Jodie was like, you know, "you gotta help her". Cause I guess her or something like that. So I walked in there and I separated them and this and that. That's when, to be honest with you, I don't even, I can't even remember how the gun came into play, for

real. Well, we started, kind of wrestling around and the gun went off. And then it went off again.

Investigator: How many times do you think it went off?

Bryan Greenwell: Honestly man, I don't even know. I mean, I was... blacked out or something like that. I don't know. Man, it's like... I'm guessing two or three times, three. Something like that. I remember hearing three gunshots.

Investigator: Do you remember which one you shot first?

Bryan Greenwell: No, honestly. I don't. I freaked out. And I was like "man, what the fuck. I came over here to help somebody this shit happens." I think... I know it went off once. I think she got hit first, I'm not for sure. I mean was still struggling and it went off again. I do remember that. And that's when he fell on the bed. And I didn't, I mean, I didn't know what to do. I mean, I went over there, like you said, there was no intentions of going over there malice intended or nothing like that, you know?

Investigator: You remember about what time, I know this happened Friday the 13th, is when we were there and it was later in the afternoon when we got there. When do you think this might have happened? Was it on that Friday? If I'm not mistaken she was supposed to start that new job on Friday at noon, does that sound right? Do you know that? Jodie knew that, that's why

Bryan Greenwell: I don't know.

Investigator: Okay.

Bryan Greenwell: I mean, after it was all done and everything I might have heard Jodie say something she was supposed to start a job today or something like that. It was like "what the fuck man, now what am I supposed to do?" You know, we were both like that, like "what do we do?" Neither one of us knew what to do. She was like "listen, call the cops" cause like you said we went over there with the intentions of helping not hurting somebody, you know? And she never, Jodie never, was near that apartment, what-so-ever, as far as I know of...

Investigator: She told me that she did. She didn't go into the room that you guys were in which is the back bedroom. But she said she made it into part of it. You said she tried to help them afterwards, so

Bryan Greenwell: I mean, she was like...

Investigator: I mean; it doesn't matter to me. If she came in If she came in it's fine. That doesn't get you in trouble that makes you a normal human being that wants to come in and maybe try to help.

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah, I mean, we was both you know saying, she was like saying, well actually I was standing there then turned around and looked at her at the door and I was like "what do I do?" You know what I'm saying? I didn't know. And I still, to this day, I still can't tell you exactly, from start to finish, what happened, you know what I'm saying? I just know that I was the one standing in the room when both of them were laying there. Jodie was like "are they still breathing" whatever, you know what I'm saying. I was like "I don't know?" I mean what, what, I mean, how do you check if somebody is...

Investigator: Never been in that situation before.

Bryan Greenwell: And I do know that, I'm not for sure if the landlord called or if Jodie called the landlord or what, I'm not for sure, but I do remember hearing her say the landlord called or the landlord's wife or something like that saying about you the cops dope from them or something. look like we went in there to rob them or something which wasn't the case. Nothing was took, nothing like that. And I was like man, I didn't know what to do. You know what I mean? I still don't know what to do. I mean, I don't know...

Investigator: What happened with the gun? What did you do with the gun?

Bryan Greenwell: Destroyed it. Melted it down.

Investigator: Melted it down? How did you do that? That takes a lot of heat.

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah, I know. Well, actually the gun didn't get melted down it got took apart and got melted down. And I was like, "man, I don't know" and I gave the gun back to the person that owned it. You know what I'm saying? He just let me borrow it. And I can't tell you his name because I don't want to get him...

Investigator: So did you destroy it or did you give it back to the guy?

Bryan Greenwell: No, I took it apart Most of the gun went back.

Investigator: I mean, don't bullshit me. I mean, it's not, this is not a, that's not a big issue there. My big thing honestly is, well, yeah I would like to recover it but I just want to make sure you didn't just toss it somewhere and some kid got to it, that's more what I'm worried about.

Bryan Greenwell: No No I made sure, yeah, I made sure there wasn't no kid or no innocent bystander or nothing like that was gonna pick it up.

Investigator: What model was it?

Bryan Greenwell: [silence]

Investigator: I know what caliber it was, at this point, wondering what model it was.

Bryan Greenwell: A Taurus, I think. Or... uh, yeah I think it was a Taurus. Pretty sure it was a Taurus.

Investigator: And you know, I know it was a 40, you know. I'm just curious.

Bryan Greenwell: I mean, to be honest with you I tried blocking it out but...

Investigator: You can't block something like that out, man. And if you try to it's eventually going to come back out and it's going to eat and eat and eat. I mean, I can tell how upset you are

Bryan Greenwell: I never meant for none of this to happen. I mean, I don't know what else to say besides that it was me.

Investigator: Is there anybody else there with you guys?

Bryan Greenwell: [shakes head "no"]

Investigator: Nobody else, okay. Did you have the gun on you when you first went over there? Was this a "I went back over there and got it" or did you have it on you when you first went over there?

Bryan Greenwell: Nah, I had it on me because the situation that fuckin' everybody was saying that people was out looking for and this and that so I kept it on me. Just for her protection. I wasn't going to ...

Investigator: I understand. Did you, you said you didn't take anything from the scene at all.

Bryan Greenwell: No.

Investigator: No. Did ya'll leave anything by any chance? Lose anything?

Bryan Greenwell: I don't, honestly I don't know. I mean, I didn't even try fuckin' finding the shells that came out of the gun. I was just like, you know, I was dumbfounded, pretty much.

Investigator: And I know you didn't, this happened in the back bedroom, where they fighting in the back bedroom and you got into the middle of it or did, you know, did you and him get into a fight in the back bedroom? I just want to be clear about it.

Bryan Greenwell: Well they was fighting. Worse than, we was all standing outside in the hallway..

Investigator: And we're talking about physical fighting, not arguing

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah, we're talking about physical fighting. And I was like, you know, that's when Jodie said "you gotta help her". That's when I went in there and everything just happened so fast that ... you know the rest. I mean, she did try to help them. I didn't know what to do to help, I mean, I freaked out. I still freak out.

Investigator: Well, I tell you what. This whole thing, this whole situation, I mean it sucks, I mean I was right. Was I not right from the minute I went in here on the way things went down?

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah.

Investigator: And I still believe bad shit happens to good people all the time but this series of events doesn't paint you out to be a cold calculated "I don't give a fuck" killer. I mean, shit happened, yeah. There's nothing we can do about that now. But the way that we presented it as you coming over to help, and correct me if I'm wrong, would you see there's a big difference between somebody who doesn't give a fuck and coming over there and shooting people opposed to somebody who is there for a purpose and I can confirm that purpose because there was a domestic fight going on, and you go over there and shit goes bad.

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah.

Investigator: There's a big difference there.

Bryan Greenwell: Yeah. There's a big difference. I mean, I shouldn't have went with my gut and just stayed out of it. But I'm not that type of person. If I see somebody needs help, I try to help.

Investigator: I'm going to let you take this picture with you, too. I don't know if you have any with your kids with you. Because I think, because I think the way we talked here tonight, that getting to see them is going to come a whole lot sooner than if would have been if you told me "I'm not talking to you, get out of the room". I mean, I could have happened either way, and that's why I really.. That's what I was really worried about. That you wouldn't understand how important of a chance I was trying to give you to get out. You were in a hole. And you're still in a hole. It's definitely not as deep as it was with your story out there. And it goes a long way with prosecutors, defense attorneys, and judges and jurors. So we got to look at its a bump in your road. That bump was sitting back at your back side, you hadn't crossed it yet. Now we're across it. Now we are going to figure out from here where to go and you're going to get your life back on track. Does that sound like a good plan, here?

Bryan Greenwell: That's not what I wanted.

Investigator: No? Nothing but future in front of you now. Don't get me wrong. We're going to take a little bit of it here, but it aint all of it. And what you do with the rest of it, is up to you.

Bryan Greenwell: I'll never see daylight again.

Investigator: See people I've talked to heard you say that and I disagree with that. You have to remember where we are. We're tend to be more lenient, more liberal here.

Bryan Greenwell: I hope so.

Investigator: And you've done yourself big time favors here. You've done the best you can for yourself with the situation you're in. I'm going to go out here and talk to the corrections people and make sure they know about everything. Any questions you have for me right now? You have anything? Alright. Sit tight. We'll be back here in a few minutes.

Appendix C: Russell Williams Police Interrogation

<https://murderpedia.org>

Note: Only 32 pages are included in the appendix, because the suspect confessed his crime on page 33, and the argumentation came to an end.

Detective: Just have a seat here, Russ.

Russell Williams: The guy I was speaking with on whatever night that was, was Russ as well.

Detective: Oh, yeah?

Russell Williams: And, and he took, uh, took every number I had.

Detective: Yeah, oh they were uh, doing some pretty thorough interviews that night.

Russell Williams: Yeah, absolutely. I was...

Detective: Alright.

Russell Williams: Glad to see it.

Detective: Uh, I'm just going to move your gloves, uh, that's a little microphone.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Just make sure it's nice and clear, um, as you can see here everything in this room is, uh, videotaped and audio taped.

Russell Williams: Check.

Detective: Uh, ever been interviewed by the police in a, in a room like this before or?

Russell Williams: I have never been interviewed like this...

Detective: Oh, no? okay.

Russell Williams: This is the closest to interview for NIS for top secret clearance.

Detective: Oh, yeah? Alright, well, again Russell, I appreciate you coming in, uh, an investigation like this, I mean, I'm sure you can appreciate its been big news, uh...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Especially down, uh, Belleville way uh, and you know obviously our approach in cases like this is that uh, uh, we don't give up on somebody being alive until...

Russell Williams: Mm-Hm.

Detective: We get evidence that they're not so um, because of that we're treating, uh, Jessica's case as an emergent situation obviously.

Russell Williams: Absolutely, yeah.

Detective: Um, so we're, we're fast forwarding things that we might normally take our time with...

Russell Williams: Mm-Hmm.

Detective: Uh, and that's why, uh, we're here on a Sunday afternoon, uh...

Russell Williams: Sure.

Detective: So, uh, again I appreciate it.

Russell Williams: No problem.

Detective: Um, we're going to do a pretty thorough interview today.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Okay, um, the reason for that is because, uh, the last thing we want is to be calling people back again and again and again, okay?

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Um, so what we're going to do is we're going to go over a number of things and uh...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: I'm going to explain what all those are to you.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Okay, um, I'm a big coffee guy. I don't know if you're a coffee guy or not.

Russell Williams: I am a coffee guy, actually, yeah.

Detective: I don't want to drink in front of you so, um...

Russell Williams: No, no, I appreciate that.

Detective: Alright, go ahead.

Russell Williams: I could, uh, definitely. Are they black?

Detective: Yeah, they're just black with, uh, with sugar, uh...

Russell Williams: Uh, you could definitely uh, take [inaudible]. Well, I just started my gum so I'll probably have it in a little bit.

Detective: Sorry, you what? Sorry.

Russell Williams: Gum, just..

Detective: Oh [laughs]

Russell Williams: I just put a piece of gum in.

Detective: There's napkins here if you want to toss it or whatever.

Russell Williams: I appreciate that.

Detective: Alright, and again, um, like I said this interview's going to be very thorough.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Um, but again, uh, I have a simple rule when I talk to people. It's, uh, I'm sure you're the same way. I treat people, everybody, with respect and...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: I'll ask that you do the same for me. Um, so what we're going to do is we're going to start off by, uh, going through, um, what your rights are, okay?

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Just like everybody else.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Okay, um, have you been read your rights before?

Russell Williams: No.

Detective: No? I'm sure you've seen it on TV a whole bunch of times.

Russell Williams: Oh, yeah.

Detective: But it's usually the American version so...

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: I'll go over it with you briefly, okay?

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Uh, basically in Canada, uh, as you know, I'm sure is, uh, we all have, uh, our rights guaranteed under the Charter of Rights and Freedoms.

Russell Williams: Right.

Detective: Okay, now, uh, Russell, just to avoid any confusion 'cause some people do get confused when they're talked to by the police is that, uh...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Um, you're obviously not under arrest for today, okay?

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Anytime you feel, uh, you want to leave here, you feel free to do so. The door's not locked. Theresa will walk you down to the lobby anytime you want.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Okay, um, if there's anything that comes up in our interview today, Russell, that uh, that you feel you want to talk, uh, to a lawyer about...

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Um, you just, uh, you just let me know.

Russell Williams: Sure.

Detective: Alright and the reason for that is when I explain to you exactly what's going on here, okay, um, uh, Jessica, uh, Lloyd is um, is one of uh, four cases that we're currently investigating.

Russell Williams: Right.

Detective: Um, and essentially what's happened over the past, uh, uh, about four or five months...

Russell Williams: Yep.

Detective: Um, there have been four occurrences, uh, like I said, that we're looking into.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Uh, two of those occurrences occurred in September of 2009.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Uh, and very briefly they were up in the, uh, the Tweed area.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Uh, they involved, uh, somebody entering uh, two different woman's houses.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Um, in the evening hours and uh, committing, uh, sexual acts.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Okay, uh, in, uh, November 2009...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Uh, a young lady by the name of, uh, Marie-France, uh, Comeau, uh...

Russell Williams: One of my people, yeah.

Detective: Yeah, was found, uh, murdered in her home in Brighton.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: And, uh, we believe that there was a sexual component to that crime as well.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: And um, then most recently we have Jessica Lloyd's disappearance.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Okay, so essentially when you look at those kind of crimes we're looking at number of different, uh, potential criminal charges, alright?

Russell Williams: I hope so.

Detective: Um, we're looking at issues, uh, all the way from the most serious one which is first degree murder.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Uh, kidnapping, uh, sexual assault...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Uh, break and enter with intent to commit sexual assault...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Uh, forcible confinement, okay? And, uh, so what I want to make sure you understand and this is what we do literally we talking to, is that clearly when we find out who's responsible for one or all of those crimes...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Uh, they could be charged with one or all of those offences, okay? Whether it's you or whether it's anybody else, alright?

Russell Williams: I'd hope so.

Detective: And that's why it's important that we us, make sure the people understand what they have to and what they don't have to do when they're talking to us.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Okay, so as I said before, any point today, uh, you feel the need you want to speak to a lawyer, uh, you let me know.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: And uh, we can take you to a room where you can do that in private. Okay?

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Um, do you have your own lawyer?

Russell Williams: I had a reality lawyer but...

Detective: Okay. [laughs]

Russell Williams: No, I don't have a lawyer.

Detective: Alright, um, if at any point you want to make that call and you don't know who to call...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Uh, we have a phone list of lawyers that, uh, are available to give you advice free of charge right over the phone.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Okay, so again if at any point today you want to, uh, take advantage of that you just let me know.

Russell Williams: Sure.

Detective: Um, is there any reason you want to call a lawyer now?

Russell Williams: No.

Detective: Okay. Um, couple other, uh, fairly simple and straight forward, uh, things that uh, you probably understand but, uh, again we go over them to make sure everybody's clear...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Is that, uh, you don't have to speak to me today, okay?

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: And the reason for that is because the law considers me to be what we refer to as a person of authority.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Okay, probably similar to what you may be considered to be at the base.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Um, and because of that I can be compelled to appear before any Judge in the country basically to account for what takes place here today, between you and I, okay?

Russell Williams: Sure.

Detective: Okay and that's the reason why everything's recorded...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...because there can't be a more accurate record than that, right? So...

Russell Williams: No, understood.

Detective: Um, another thing I want to make sure you understand is that, uh, you know you mentioned a second ago about uh, Miss Comeau, um, being one of your, uh, work associates. Uh, so I don't know what happened since November, um, on the military side of things, uh, but what we want to make people clear on is that, uh, if you have been spoken to by any person in authority...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...or any police officer about any of those case, um, I don't want what they may have said to you to, uh, um, make you feel influenced or compelled to say anything to me today, okay? Whatever you might have felt influenced or compelled to say to them earlier...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective:... you don't have to repeat to me. You don't have to say anything further, okay?

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: But obviously what you do say you know for the third time is...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ... being recorded, right? So, uh...

Russell Williams: Understood. These first two attacks that happened, uh, not that far from my place in Tweed. Well, the second one did.

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: We didn't even know the first one had happened but, uh, I understand that was the reasonably close as well but the second one was, uh, was very close.

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: So certainly at the time the OPP did a, uh, went door to door...

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: ...and, and, uh, within a couple of days, probably the same night, so I spoke with a couple back then.

Detective: Okay, um, yeah, and I'm, I'm aware of that...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: From, uh, looking at the different cases and essentially uh, Russell, uh, in a nutshell, that's what we wanted to, uh, to talk to you about.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Okay, um, those four cases are, uh, a concern to us.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: And uh, you know you've kind of, uh, all most hit the nail on the head about, uh, some of our issues that kind of, uh, make us want to talk to, to, Russell Williams, okay?

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Um, cause essentially uh, there's a, a, a, connection, um, between you and uh, and all four of those cases. Would you agree, geographically?

Russell Williams: And that I, I guess I drive past, uh, yes, uh...

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams:... I would say there's, uh, a connection, yeah.

Detective: Yeah, and that's what, that's why, uh, I'll be quite frank with you, that's why, uh, things kind of, um, uh, evolved when uh, the officers talked to you Thursday night.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Uh, we kind of went from there because uh, when I think you discussed with the fact that you were a, uh, a, a, Colonel...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...uh, at the base.

Russell Williams: I was in uniform at the time, so...

Detective: Yeah, so pretty obvious, right?

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Um, so essentially, uh, then the connection with Miss Comeau, um...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...was made. Um, and I believe you're uh, a door or two down from one of the two, uh, incidents, uh...

Russell Williams: Think, uh...

Detective: ...in Tweed.

Russell Williams: ... three doors down, yeah.

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: Very close, absolutely.

Detective: Yeah, exactly. So, uh, those are some of the issues I want to discuss with you.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Okay, um, so just getting back to uh, those four incidents that we're talking about, um, maybe you can just give me a little bit of history as to, uh, your arrival and the uh, and the base in Trenton, when did you start working there?

Russell Williams: Friday, on the day I was, um, hm. Friday on the day I was at home most the time, most the day. I had the start of a stomach flu.

Detective: Okay, in Ottawa or Tweed?

Russell Williams: In Tweed.

Detective: In Tweed, okay.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: So, we backtrack then. So, all day Friday you're at home?

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: And then what time do you leave to go to the base to sleep there on the Friday night?

Russell Williams: Um, mm, not sure. Probably just, you know, went in for, just before bed. Uh, so I probably left Tweed at between 8 or 9 or so.

Detective: Okay, uh, and you get to the base and spend the evening there and get up for the five thirty...

Russell Williams: Yep.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: That's right.

Detective: So, we back track from there, um, you, when did you arrive at your home, uh, at the cottage? I want, I don't want you confused between home in Ottawa and the home in Tweed, so.

Russell Williams: Yeah, yeah, understood.

Detective: So, uh...

Russell Williams: No, I have been in Tweed all week.

Detective: Yup.

Russell Williams: Uh, the week prior now, um, yeah. I think that's the case. I was in Tweed all week. Flew Saturday, headed to Ottawa Saturday night....

Detective: Okay, so, um, if you didn't have the stomach flu on the Friday, what was your schedule like?

Russell Williams: ...I think it was 7 or 8, really.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: Um, what would have been my schedule? Just a standard schedule in the office.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: So, um, I'll just brief in the morning. Couple of, uh, couple of meetings. Can't remember what the specifics on that were going to be.

Detective: Okay, so, um, Thursday night you slept at Tweed or you...

Russell Williams: Yup.

Detective: Alright, and what did you do Thursday during the day?

Russell Williams: Thursday during the day I was at the base again. Um, I think it was a very standard day. I can't recall exactly but uh, yeah, nothing. Was not flying so I was at the base so I would have gone in early in the morning, back in the evening again.

Detective: Okay, do you remember what time you left the base that night?

Russell Williams: [sigh] Mm... I don't remember anything peculiar so I would say, uh, I don't know. Probably 7 to 9 somewhere in that range.

Detective: Okay, that's when you left?

Russell Williams: Left the base, yeah.

Detective: And what, what's...

Russell Williams: It's a 45 minute transit so...

Detective: 45 minutes home.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Now, I'm not going to walk you through November but I'm going to take you to a date that's probably pretty fresh in your mind, uh, uh, the day that, uh, that Marie-France, uh, Comeau...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Um, do you remember how you found out, uh...

Russell Williams: I do, yeah. I was sent an email, um [sighs]. Well, as soon as the, uh, off staff in the base learned they told me.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: So I got an email. I can't remember if it was late at night or in the morning but certainly I saw it. Uh, I want to say first thing in the morning because I had just come back from Ottawa. I was in Ottawa for uh, um, a set of meetings on one of the days, I can't remember what, what day of the week we're talking about but uh, yeah, no, I mean, obviously one of your people gets killed it, uh, gets your attention, so...

Detective: Absolutely.

Russell Williams: Everyone [inaudible].

Detective: And how did you know Marie-France Comeau?

Russell Williams: I only met her once. Um, she was on a crew, uh, I was on, uh, just after I got to the base.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: So, uh, I can't even remember. I think it was a one day trip. Uh, I did a number of trips, uh, in Canada transporting um, our, um, you know troops for the first leg out of Edmonton. Uh, you know we tend to hopscotch them across, uh, until they get in the theater. So anyway, I, I can't remember which trip it was but uh, I did a number of them out to Edmonton just to, to pick up the troops, bring them to Trenton, and then uh, put a fresh crew on and uh, 'cause we fly out and back in the same day so pushing the edge of that uh, fresh crew on and continue on after a couple hour delay.

Detective: Okay. Do you know, uh, roughly when that happened?

Russell Williams: That we were on the same crew?

Detective: Eh, the time you met her, the one time there, yeah.

Russell Williams: It was soon after I got to the base so uh, I, I don't remember exactly but I would say in the first couple of months so August, September.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Um, now you got that email...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...notifying you that something had happened.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Uh, do you have, uh, any kind of, uh, a clear recollection as to how your schedule is going that week?

Russell Williams: Well, I can't remember what again, what day that, uh, the message came in. Just a second. Um, no, I can't remember what day, the day of the week, but I, um... Let me think. There was all a bunch of activity, uh, spun up as a result, obviously. [sighs] No, I can't remember the day of the week. Um, I'm just trying to think through the news reports I read. No. I'm sorry. I can't remember what day that was but uh... Well, what I, what we

learned after the fact was that the, um, MP's had learnt uh, of her death. I think quite a bit after her body had been discovered.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: So, I think what happened, I'm sorry, just a second. Okay. So, I think, if I remember correctly, the MP's learned late that evening, I can't remember when. Obviously, her, her body was discovered. It's probably in news reports but uh, so they learnt and then they passed it to OPS] so they immediately passed it to me.

Detective: Mm-hm.

Russell Williams: The MP's work for the [inaudible] operations officers so they go, you know, through their chain of command and then as soon as the, uh, the duty watch officer had that information she advised me...

Detective: Okay, um, so again that...

Russell Williams: ... along with some others.

Detective: Right, right. I'm sure it spread like wild fire.

Russell Williams: Yeah. Yeah, absolutely.

Detective: Um, so, that particular week, uh, do you have any recollection, well, for instance, when you got the email, uh...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Do you remember where you were?

Russell Williams: I was at home in Tweed.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Um, do you remember if that was a week you were, um, reasonably stable in Trenton or had you flown a bit?

Russell Williams: No, I had been in Ottawa. I had been in Ottawa earlier in the week, uh, for some meetings over in uh, in Gatineau for one of the um, [inaudible] C17 acquisitions. I was a project director when I was here in Ottawa for that so just some follow up stuff on that.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: So I had been here, um, at some point in that week. Again, I can't remember how the days all fell together but um, I seem to remember that I got this word shortly after having come back from Ottawa. I, seems to me it was the same week.

Detective: So, if we were to, uh, to you know, do a similar, uh, investigation into your background, is there, is there anything you can think of that anybody may have misinterpreted or anything, uh, in your history, that somebody might say "Russell Williams, uh"....

Russell Williams: Absolutely not.

Detective: ...did this?

Russell Williams: No.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: Be very boring.

Detective: What's that?

Russell Williams: It'll be very boring.

Detective: [laughs] alright, 'Cause and essentially that's what I'm looking at is that, uh...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Um, uh, you seem like a very intelligent person, and I think you can see how, um, a surprise like that would, uh, certainly...

Russell Williams: Absolutely.

Detective: ... send some alarm bells on an...

Russell Williams: There's nothing.

Detective: ...investigation. Okay?

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Um, so the next thing we need to cover off is, uh, well, I'll just ask you this straight out. Uh, given the types of crimes we're investigating, uh, do you get much chance to, uh, to watch television shows, CSI, things like that?

Russell Williams: I do watch, uh, I prefer Law and Order but I do watch CSI occasionally, yes.

Detective: Okay, so you have an idea of, obviously the forensic capabilities, things like that, are out there.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: What would you be willing to give me today to help me, uh, move past you in this investigation.

Russell Williams: What, uh, what do you need?

Detective: Well, um, well do you want to supply things like fingerprints, blood samples?

Russell Williams: Sure.

Detective: Things like that.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Okay. Um, footwear impressions.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Okay, alright. Um, I think that's what we're going, we're going to ask you to do.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Alright, now we have a process we have to go through to do that.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Um, and for the blood sample, I don't take the blood sample. We have specially trained officers that are trained to do that.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Uh, I'm going to step out and make sure they're still available.

Russell Williams: Can I assume you're going to be discreet?

Detective: As possible, yeah.

Russell Williams: 'Cause uh, you know, this would have a very significant impact on the Base if they thought you thought I did this.

Detective: Well, uh [inaudible] Russell, that's one of the reasons we're here on a Sunday afternoon.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Um, uh, the uh, military's certainly been of great assistance uh, to us.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Especially in relation to Miss Comeau's investigation.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: So that's certainly one of the things that went into our decision to, to give you a call at home today and see if we could deal with this today.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: So, okay, um...

Russell Williams: 'Cause it's tough to undo the rumor mill once it gets started... but I appreciate that.

Detective: Okay.

Detective: Now that you've had some time to, uh, and I know we've been throwing a lot of things at you here but now you've had some time to, to think about things, um, is there anything, uh, that you're concerned about, uh, that Buccal swab matching in any of those four residences.

Russell Williams: No.

Detective: Um, is there, I guess, let me explain what I'm getting at here Russell. Okay, um, this is a significant investigation as you can, as you can...

Russell Williams: Yeah, absolutely.

Detective: Well, imagine...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Um, but, uh, that DNA is going to be uh, significant in our investigation both...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ... you know, quite possibly to help you, quite possibly to help us.

Russell Williams: Yeah, understood.

Detective: I don't know yet, I don't know what the result is yet.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Um, and I'll go back to the example I gave you 'cause they're very similar, uh, issue, I think. Um, and you talked about the idea of discretion here...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Okay, uh, you talked about the idea that, uh, um, you know, you, well I think hopefully you appreciate the fact of how we approached you here.

Russell Williams: Yeah, absolutely.

Detective: Um, and essentially, uh, we have no issues with that, okay? Um, we, we talked recently about, you know, the whole idea of any unusual sex acts of your history.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Um, but another thing can often happen in cases like this is that people um, become concerned about uh, um, things like extramarital affairs.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Uh, indiscretions along those lines.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Um, is there any contact that you may have had with any of those four women, um, that you may not want your wife to be aware of? Anything like that, that we should know about to try and uh, explain why if, if your DNA is found?

Russell Williams: [inhales deeply]

Detective: To help us understand why it may be there.

Russell Williams: Absolutely not. [sighs].

Detective: Can you think of any reason, um, why we would find you DNA in any of those residences?

Russell Williams: No.

Detective: Let's, let's focus on well, for instance [edited] house, I believe.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Let me just check the name there. Make sure I've got the right address. Talking about the house that was just a couple doors down from you there on the, in Tweed.

Russell Williams: Couple doors down was...

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: Laurie, I don't know her last name. I don't know.

[edited]

Detective: Massicotte.

Russell Williams: I don't even know what her last name is but uh, there's uh, uh, the, the, woman down the road three doors down was...

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: ... her name was Laurie. I don't know her last name.

Detective: Alright, I'll just make sure we're on the same page here. Mm, yeah. My understanding is she lived at 76 Cozy Cove. Yeah, so she would be the one, the second one, uh, the second incident on you, on your road there.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Couple doors down. Ever been in her house?

Russell Williams: No. We met her once, I think the first summer, um, we were there, so in '04.

Detective: Okay and that's what I'm getting at. I, I'd, I, again this is a credibility issue.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Russ, because I, I don't want to come and see you two weeks from now and say, you know, Russ, uh...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ... our CSI people were in that house uh, are you familiar with how C, uh, DNA works?

Russell Williams: I think broadly, yes, I...

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: ... would guess so.

Detective: Um, one of the challenges we have in 2010, DNA has become so, um, precise that uh, I guess the best way to explain it is, I can think of 15 years ago when I started in, uh, violent crime investigations...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ... um, for us to get DNA match the sample we had to find was, um, you know, probably would've filled half of on of these cups.

Russell Williams: Does it, yeah.

Detective: You know, 'cause they destroy so much of the uh, the sample and, and, the testing.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Um, essentially DNA has become more and more precise to the point where when you and I walked in this room earlier today...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Uh, we could've sat down, talked for 30 seconds...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...walked out. CSI officer could've come in three, four days from now...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ... did some swabs here and he would've found your DNA and my DNA...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ...and probably a lot of other people's DNA.

Russell Williams: Sure.

Detective: Um, little bit gross to think about but essentially, uh, you know as we talk, um, we, you know, a little bit of aspirate comes out of our mouths....

Russell Williams: Yeah, no. I understand.

Detective: ... that, uh, contains our bloods or uh, our skin cells contain our DNA...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...and that's what I'm getting at. If you were ever in Laurie's residence...

Russell Williams: Um...

Detective: Quite possibly, quite innocently, your DNA could be, uh, in that residence. Has there ever been a time you've been in there?

Russell Williams: No.

Detective: Okay, um, what about the other lady down the road.

Russell Williams: I hadn't even heard that name so, no, I don't, I don't, actually know who that was.

Detective: Okay. Have you ever visited uh, um, Marie-France Comeau at her residence?

Russell Williams: No.

Detective: Okay, alright. Um, so you're quite positive there'd be no reason why your DNA would be in any...

Russell Williams: Absolutely.

Detective: ...of those...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...three locations. Okay, um, did you know Jessica Lloyd, even in passing for any reason?

Russell Williams: No, I didn't hear her name until it was on the news.

Detective: Okay and the reason I'm asking you that, uh, is because, um, I know you were asked that question Thursday night and sometimes we find and again, this is one of those situations that can sometimes cause us to get into lengthy investigation is somebody that...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ...maybe doesn't deserve it...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ..uh, but what, what can happen sometimes is they, you know, somebody gets stopped by the police like you did and they, uh, get asked that question and people, when they're stopped by the police, they can be nervous, okay?

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Um, so they blurt out an answer and they start driving away and they're all "why'd I do that" because the problem is, is that once they, uh, get asked again, then they feel compelled to maintain that answer for fear that if they change their answers...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...somebody could find that. Do you understand what I'm saying?

Russell Williams: I do.

Detective: Okay, so I want to make sure that's not happening here. I don't care what you said to the officers on Thursday.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Last week, um, if there's any, uh, communication or contact between you and Jessica Lloyd, you seen her picture, right?

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Around town.

Russell Williams: Yeah, I saw it.

Detective: Okay, ever seen her before?

Russell Williams: I don't, no, I would say I have not.

Detective: Okay, alright. Alright, and you mentioned something about uh, doing some renovations at your, uh, at your property in Tweed there. Um, I think you said something earlier about tearing up carpet. Correct me if I'm wrong but...

Russell Williams: Oh yeah.

Detective: Okay, when did all that happen?

Russell Williams: In 2004, or 2005.

Detective: Okay, any recent, uh, renovations?

Russell Williams: No.

Detective: Okay, alright.

Detective: Just want to make sure I'm covering all the bases here. Um, okay, what kind of tires do you have on your Pathfinder?

Russell Williams: I think, um, I think they're Toyo.

Detective: Okay, but do you have a brand name or sorry, uh, the, uh...

Russell Williams: I that, is that.

Detective: Make...

Russell Williams: Um, I don't, sorry. The, the make is Toyo.

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: I don't know the model.

Detective: Okay, just, uh, I'll uh, read this off to you. See if it rings a bell... You ever heard of uh, does Toyo Open Country HTS...

Russell Williams: That's sounds right.

Detective: Does that make sense?

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Okay, when did you have those tires put on your Pathfinder?

Russell Williams: Well, it's the second version we've had of them so, uh, I think it might've been this past fall. They replaced other ones we had on the same...

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: Well, Toyo. I can't say that they were the same exactly, the same model, but uh, our dealership here in Ottawa says they're very popular for the Pathfinder so...

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: ... and they were good. They lasted a long time.

Detective: Alright, um, I've had uh, you were talking about the, the whole idea of the MP's, uh, helping us with our investigation...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ... stuff like this. Uh, you have the same system as we do at our headquarters with the swipe cards...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: One of the things, uh, one of our investigators did is they made a call while I was talking to you there, um, because we're trying to work through that week of the, uh, 23rd of November.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Um, 23rd being the Monday, uh, 24th being the Tuesday.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Um, what, what they've, what they've told us is that um, and I want to make sure I get this right, is that, uh, on the 23rd, uh, your swipe card was being used at the base, okay?

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: On Tuesday the 24th there was no use of your swipe card.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Okay, and then on the uh, the following days, uh, the Wednesday, Thursday, Friday, um, there was what appeared to be average activity of...

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: ...your swipe card on the base. Does that make sense to you?

Russell Williams: It does but that says that I was in Ottawa on the Tuesday.

Detective: Okay. Do you remember where, uh, in Ottawa you were?

Russell Williams: Yeah, I was in uh, Gatineau with uh, as I said, meeting about the uh, C17.

Detective: Okay, um, now again I want to be fair to you here. We're going back 2 months.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Um, are you sure that would've been the, uh, the day you were in Ottawa.

Russell Williams: Well, only because I wasn't at the Base.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: So, I, I can't remember honestly that that's the day that I had the meeting in Ottawa but uh, if I wasn't at the Base it was because I was there.

Detective: Okay, now if that is the day you had a meeting in Ottawa, um, do you remember being at the Base on the Monday, uh, the 23rd and swiping your card in and out? Do you remember what you would've done that evening to, to, to get to Ottawa for that meeting? Like, would it be, uh...

Russell Williams: I drove to Ottawa in the morning of the day of my meeting. So, if it was the Tuesday then I would've left uh, Tweed. It was a very foggy morning.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: Uh, that morning and I drove in that morning...

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: So, I would not have been at the Base, uh, the day I was in Ottawa 'cause the meeting started at eight thirty or something.

Detective: Okay, so you leave the Base, you would've went home to, to your residence in Tweed.

Russell Williams: Yep.

Detective: And then you left Tweed in the morning and drove up to your meeting in Ottawa.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Okay, um, you leave the, the meeting in Ottawa, is it a daytime meeting, an evening meeting or do you remember?

Russell Williams: Uh, yeah it was, uh, uh, a daytime meeting. Finished, I don't know, midafternoon or so.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: We had lunch and then uh, finished. I think uh, my wife and I had dinner 'cause she was here for work and then I headed back.

Detective: Okay, uh, well, that's, these are the kinds of things I'm trying to draw out here. That's helpful to us. Um, do you remember where you had dinner?

Russell Williams: [laugh] Uh, well, I don't remember exactly the restaurant, but it was in Westboro 'cause that's where our house was being built at the time so we had dinner. You know, in a restaurant that we would expect to be able to frequent, uh, once the house was finished.

Detective: Okay, do you remember how you paid?

Russell Williams: Uh, one of us would've paid by Mastercard, mm-hm.

Detective: Okay, are you sure about that or...

Russell Williams: Pretty sure. That's normally how we, uh...

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: ...we pay for meals.

Detective: Alright.

Russell Williams: Can't remember if it was me or my wife that paid but one of us.

Detective: Okay, and do you remember which restaurant it was again?

Russell Williams: No.

Detective: Okay, alright, and you see where I'm getting at, right? I mean the, that can be very helpful for us...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ... because we can track...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ... uh that issue, right?

Russell Williams: Oh yeah.

Detective: And we can put somebody paying for a meal at, at a location.

Russell Williams: No, yeah. I was meeting with, uh, you know, 15 people or so that day so...

Detective: Okay, what time did the meeting end?

Russell Williams: [sighs] I would say between 3 and 4.

Detective: Okay, and um, are you sure that that's the same day you went with your wife?

Russell Williams: Well, I think so. Yeah, 'cause she was here and uh, I, I think that was the day we went to this restaurant in Westboro, yes.

Detective: Okay, um, you finished dinner and do you remember what you did that evening?

Russell Williams: I would've driven back to Tweed.

Detective: Okay, and you would've, now again, uh, I know we're talking 2 months ago here but do you...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...remember specifically having dinner and then driving back to Tweed or uh, do you remember or are you just guessing here?

Russell Williams: No, I'm not really guessing. I mean, I, I believe that this night at this restaurant it was following the meetings in Ottawa...

Detective: Mm-hm.

Russell Williams: ...and I, you know, kissed my wife goodbye and headed back to Tweed...

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: ...to go to work the next day.

Detective: Okay, um, alright. The, uh, the tires that you have on your truck right, the reason I want to ask you about that is there is, there, anytime I mean, that you recall, uh, where you were stopped, um, by the officers there...

Russell Williams: Yes.

Detective: ...yeah, did they explain to you what the significance...

Russell Williams: Said that was her house.

Detective: That was her house, right.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: So you remember that location?

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Do you remember what the crossroad was or...

Russell Williams: I don't think there was a crossroad. It sort of just, uh, on the south end of 37.

Detective: Okay, um, when you get stopped at that location, has there been a time in the recent, uh, 1 or 2 weeks that uh, your vehicle has uh, left that road for any reason what so ever? Have you driven into a field with your vehicle at all, um, for any reason that you can think of?

Russell Williams: No.

Detective: Okay, um, so I want you to rack your brain here. This is important.

Russell Williams: Yeah, yeah.

Detective: So is there anything you can remember doing that uh, you know, would cause you to, to, drive off the road...

Russell Williams: No.

Detective: ... at that section of roadway?

Russell Williams: No, that's my early, uh, that's the early part of the highway and I'm just heading North. It's about 30 minutes from there to uh, no, probably 20 from there to my house.

Detective: Okay, um, would it surprise you to know that, uh, when the CSI officers were, uh, looking around her property, uh, that they identified um, a set of tire tracks, uh, to the north of her property, uh, looks as if a vehicle left the road...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: And uh, drove along the north tree line of, of, uh, Jessica Lloyd's property, okay?

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Um, they took, uh, they, they, examined those tire tracks...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: And uh, they have contacts in the tire business, obviously.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Tire tracks...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ...are a major source of uh, evidence for us.

Russell Williams: Sure.

Detective: Um, shortly after um, this investigation started they identified those tires as the same, uh, tires on your Pathfinder.

Russell Williams: Really?

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Okay, one of the other, uh, one of the other things that they do to try and identify the type vehicle that may have those tires...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Well, they do two things. They talk to witnesses...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Okay, um there was uh, a female police officer that actually drove by that location that evening.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ... and recalls seeing an SUV type vehicle in the field up to the north of Jessica Lloyd's house, uh, consistent with uh, a Pathfinder.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: It may be consistent with other things but consistent...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...with a Pathfinder. Um, and they, uh, what they also do to try to identify they type of the vehicle is they look at, uh, what they call the wheelbase width.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Okay, 'cause different vehicles different makes, models, have wheelbase width so...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...they can take those 2 sets of tire tracks, measure the distance between them...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Okay, and determine what the, uh, what the width is.

Russell Williams: Sure.

Detective: And then they can enter that into a vehicle database and it will spit out the types of vehicles.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Okay, um, your Pathfinder's uh, wheelbase width is very very close to the width of the uh, the, of the tires, uh, that were left in that field.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Okay, um, do you have any recollection at all of being off the road?

Russell Williams: No, I was not off the road, no.

Detective: Okay, alright Russell. [sighs] Um, is there anything you can think of... Let's go talk about Marie-Fances Comeau for a minute, okay?

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Is there any reason at all you can think of that during our investigation, obviously we're searching, uh, computers, things like Blackberries, right?

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Electronic devices, uh, looking through houses for things that are in handwriting, written notes, diaries, things like that.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Um, and I'm not at liberty to tell you what the content was but is there any reason at all that you can think of why Marie-France Comeau would've specifically referenced you in some of her, uh, in some of her writings?

Russell Williams: Not at all.

Detective: No?

Russell Williams: No, absolutely not. [laughs]

Detective: Okay, is there anything that she ever said to you that lead you to believe that there may have been something, uh, more than a passing interest with her towards you?

Russell Williams: Not at all, no. We spent, you know, one flight together talking. I'd go back occasionally and talk. No, I, uh, if that's the case, that's uh, that's very surprising.

Detective: Okay, alright. Um, do you have any questions for me right now?

Russell Williams: No.

Detective: Okay, I'm just going to step out and see how things are going, okay?

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: I mean, it is a Sunday but there's probably 60, 70 people working on this file so there's...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ...a lot of things happening.

Russell Williams: Sure.

Detective: Uh, so let me go out and see what's happening and then I'll come back in and we'll, we'll hopefully, continue, okay?

Detective: I told you when I came in here, uh, that I'll treat you with respect and I've asked you to do the same for me. Um, we talked about the whole idea of how we've uh, uh, approached you here, okay. Uh, trying to be as discreet as possible.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Okay, but the problem is Russell, is every time I walk out of this room there's another issue that comes up, okay, and it's not issues that point away from you. It's issues that point at you, okay? And I want, I want you to see what I mean.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Alright, this is the footwear impression of the person who approached the rear of Jessica Lloyd's house...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ...on the evening of the 28th and 29th of January.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Okay, alright. Now I want you to keep in mind that this is slightly smaller, okay, than scale, okay?

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Alright, that's not to scale. That's, that footwear is actually bigger.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: If you look here on the ruler you'll see that. Uh, one inch is just slightly smaller than an actual inch.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Alright, but this is the way it prints off on your computer.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: I'll move this over so you can see what I mean, Alright? Essentially when you're dealing with footwear impressions, um, we have a gentleman on the OPP who's uh, basically world-renowned, uh, his name is John Norman...

Russell Williams: Mm.

Detective: ...and essentially with footwear impressions, uh, you're in a situation where you're, you're pretty much in the area of, uh, fingerprints.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Okay, and essentially what we're talking about here is when, especially when you start adding other pieces of, of, uh, information...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ...that, uh, support, uh, an investigative position.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Okay, this is a photocopy of the boot that uh, you took off your foot...

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: ...just a little while ago.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Okay, now I'm not an expert in footwear impressions. I rely on the experts. Footwear impressions are very much like, uh, like fingerprint comparisons, Okay? You take a look at this print and again. This one print...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ...this person walked through. There's several different prints to compare.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: So, we're going to get features off of one print to compare features off another print to compare.

Russell Williams: Yep.

Detective: These are identical, okay? Your vehicle drove up the side of Jessica Lloyd's house. Your boots walked to the back of Jessica Lloyd's house on the evening of the 28th and 29th of January, okay? You want discretion, we need to have some honesty, okay? Because this is, this is getting out of control really fast, Russel, okay? Really, really fast.

Russell Williams: [sniffs] hmm [sighs]

Detective: This is getting beyond my control, alright? I came in here a few hours ago and I called you the way I called you today because I wanted to give you the benefit of the doubt...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ...but you and I both know you were at Jessica Lloyd's house and I need to know why.

Russell Williams: Well, I don't know what to say, it's, um...

Detective: Well, you need to explain it because this is the other problem we're having Russell, okay? Again, these decisions are made by me...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Right now there's warrant being executed at your residence in Ottawa, okay? So your wife now knows what's going on. There's a search warrant being executed at the, your residence in Tweed and your vehicles been seized, okay? You and I both know they're going to find evidence that links you to these situations, okay? You and I both know that the unknown offender, male DNA on Marie-France Comeau's body is going to be matched to

you, quite possible before the evening's over, okay? This is a major investigation. The Center of Forensic Science is on call 24 hours a day helping us with this.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Your opportunity to take some control here and to have some explanation that anybody's going to believe is quickly expiring.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Okay, we're applying, the investigators now applying for a warrant to search your office. Uh, these aren't decisions that we can say yes or no to. This is the practical steps...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ...in an investigation like this.

Russell Williams: [sighs]

Detective: And Russell... Russell...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Listen to me for a second, okay? When that evidence comes in and that DNA match, when that phone rings, and somebody knocks on this door...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Your credibility is gone, okay, because this is how credibility works, alright, and I know you're an intelligent person and you probably don't need to hear this explanation but I also know your minds racing right now, okay, cause I sat across from a lot of people in your position over the years...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ...okay, the bottom line is, is that as soon as we get that piece of evidence that solidifies it...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: ...DNA. Okay, as soon as the expert in footwear impressions, the expert in tire impressions calls me "yes, yes I examined those and they're..."

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: "...a match"

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: It's all over because as soon as that happens, where's your credibility? Where's your believability? You're just another, um, and again, don't take this the wrong way, okay, but you can see if you step outside this room in your mind, and imagine how people are going to view you, okay? If the truth comes out after the clear evidence is presented to you when you finally go "okay, I'm screwed now"...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: What are we going to do, Russell? You know there's only one option. What are you, what are you, what other option is there?

Russell Williams: What's the option?

Detective: Well, I don't think you want the cold blooded psychopath option. I might be wrong eh, 'cause don't get me wrong, I've met guys who actually kind of enjoyed the notoriety, got off on it. Got off on having that label. Bernardo being one of them. I don't see that in you. If I saw that in you, I wouldn't even be back in here talking to you, quite frankly, but maybe I'm wrong. Maybe you got me fooled. I don't know. This is over and it can have a, a bad ending where Jessica's parents continue wondering where her daughters lying.

Russell Williams: [sigh]

Detective: I don't know. I mean, obviously there's a huge search still under way and it will continue, it will continue until her body's found. That might even happen tonight for all I know. Once that happens, then I don't know what other cards you would have to play. What are you going to do?

Detective: Russell, what are we going to do?

Russell Williams: Call me Russ, please.

Detective: Okay, what are we going to do, Russ?

Russell Williams: [sigh]

Detective: Is Jessica somewhere we can find her easily? Like is it something where I can make a call and tell somebody to go to a location they're going to find her or is this something where we have to go and, and, um, take a walk...

Russell Williams: [sigh]

Detective: Which direction are we heading in here?

Detective: Russ, maybe, maybe this would help, can you tell me what the issue is you're struggling with

Detective: What's the issue you're struggling with?

Russell Williams: [sigh]

Russell Williams: [sniff] It's hard to believe this is happening.

Detective: Why is that?

Detective: Why is it hard to believe?

Russell Williams: [sigh]

Russell Williams: Um, it's just, it's just hard to believe. [sigh]

Detective: Who's decision was it, when we're going to find out the answer to this anyway but who's decision was it to issue the, uh, directive to the base personnel that nobody had to speak to the police and to seek legal counsel before they were questioned. Because my unders...

Russell Williams: I don't think that was issued.

Detective: My understand that direction came from somebody that reports to you. What do you think they're going to say?

Russell Williams: Well...

Detective: Russ...

Russell Williams: No, no.

Detective: What do you think they're going to say, alright? Uh, and lets, lets step back for a second here, okay? I really don't think it benefits you or makes you look any better to start debating the little issues.

Russell Williams: No, no but that is news to me.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: I have a legal officer that reports to me...

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: ...who may have given that direction...

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: ...but that's the first time I've heard it, if that's true, that's the first time I've heard that.

Detective: Alright, and that may be the case but how does it look? We're not even dealing with something that's really, uh, evidence cause it's not needed, I mean...

Russell Williams: No, no but that...

Detective: We've got DNA and all this over stuff that's not even needed.

Russell Williams: What was the direction?

Detective: I don't recall but it was something along the lines of, uh, telling the people on the base that they didn't, uh, they weren't required legally to speak with the police and they should seek legal counsel before the decide to speak but...

Russell Williams: Well if that was, if that was actually said, it would not have been to the base at large. It, it may have been to the individual they, uh, the boyfriend who is the suspect.

Detective: Well, I understanding it went out to all personnel.

Russell Williams: No, absolutely not.

Detective: Maybe, maybe, no, only on your command, I don't know.

Russell Williams: It didn't.

Detective: Right, okay. That's fine.

Russell Williams: I did never see it.

Detective: That's fine. Now let's get back to the issue.

Detective: What's that?

Russell Williams: When you talk about perception my only 2 immediate concerns from a perception perspective are what my wife must be going through right now...

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: ... and the impact this is going to have on the Canadian Forces.

Detective: Where do we go? Russ, is there anything you want from me? Is there anything you want me to explain? Is there something missing you're struggling with that I can shed some light on for you?

Russell Williams: [sigh] No, I'm struggling with how upset my wife is right now.

Detective: Russ, what are you looking for?

Russell Williams: I'm concerned that they're tearing apart my wife's brand new house.

Detective: So am I but if nobody tells them what's there and what's not, they don't have no choice.

Detective: Computers have been brought to Microsoft in California. They'll be, they'll be picking apart, you can't erase things from computers, it doesn't happen, I'm sure you've seen that, I'm sure that's pretty common knowledge these days. It just doesn't happen. They sell programs that uh, to try and help people clean their computers and stuff and our guys are pulling that stuff out all the time. The FBI's pulling that stuff out all the time. This investigation will end up costing no less than ten million dollars, easy and they will say no to nothing. Any requests this major case manager makes on this case, they've already been told it's approved, don't even bother asking. So, what I am doing, Russ, I put my best foot forward here for you, bud, I really have. I don't, I don't know what else to do to, to make, make you understand the impact of what's happening here. Do we talk?

Russell Williams: I want to um, minimize the impact on my wife.

Detective: So, do I.

Russell Williams: So how do we do that?

Detective: Well, you start by telling the truth.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: Alright, so where is she?

Russell Williams: Got a map?

Detective: Um, is she close to where she lives? I got maps of that general area. Which town is she near? Why don't we start there?

Russell Williams: I'm not sure but if you give me a map of um, that covers Kaladar down to the highway and over to Tweed and south, I'll show you.

Detective: Let me see what I got here. I might have something. Is she inside, outside?

Russell Williams: Outside.

Detective: That's probably the biggest area that I have there, Russ.

Russell Williams: You need more. You need a real map.

Detective: So, where am I going on the, on here to get to her.

Russell Williams: [sighs] in this block here.

Detective: Okay, so you're pointing to...

Russell Williams: You need a, a detailed map of that area and I'll show you where she is...

Detective: Okay, is she close to a road?

Russell Williams: Yep.

Detective: Alright, um, is this something where, is she, is she buried or is she...

Russell Williams: No.

Detective: ... Somewhere where if you walk there you would, you would fairly easily see her?

Russell Williams: It's here.

Detective: Okay so she's south of 7, uh, east of Tweed.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: West of 41.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: And uh, what's this road here?

Russell Williams: I'm not sure.

Detective: Neither am I, okay. I'll be right back, okay? Do you want any water or anything?

Russell Williams: Sure.

Detective: Okay, I'll be right back. How long has she been there for?

Russell Williams: A little over a week.

Detective: Was it fairly quick from the time she left?

Russell Williams: Friday night.

Detective: Friday night.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: So, where does she go between Thursday night and Friday night?

Russell Williams: In Tweed.

Detective: With you?

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: How long was she alive for?

Russell Williams: Almost 24 hours. Not quite.

Detective: Okay. Russ, you're doing the right thing here, okay?

Russell Williams: Well, again, my interest is in, uh, into my, my wife's life a little easier.

Detective: Yeah, okay.

Russell Williams: And with her family as well.

Detective: Oh, we share that interest.

Russell Williams: But there's no, uh, your time in Ottawa is wasted really. I'll tell you where the memory stick cards are.

Detective: Where are they?

Russell Williams: They're in the house there but...

Detective: In Ottawa.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: Whereabouts?

Russell Williams: Um, some in the camera bag, which they would have found in my office.

Detective: Mm-hm.

Russell Williams: And in the, when you walk into the office, on the left side, there's a um, uh, desk, uh, drawers...

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: ...set of drawers like a filing cabinet, wooden, Ikea, in one of the top two drawers and there's a plastic divider...

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: ...and there's uh, inside there, there are 2 memory cards.

Detective: Okay.

Russell Williams: Which are blank but I'm sure they can be re, uh...

Detective: And who's images are on those cards?

Russell Williams: Uh, well, the, I have erased them but I expect, uh, you'll be able to draw images of uh, Jessica and I.

Detective: What about Marie?

Russell Williams: There may be images on there as well.

Detective: And the 2 women from September?

Russell Williams: Yep.

Detective: Okay, do you have those images stored anywhere else?

Russell Williams: Yep, they're um, 2 hard drives in the house in Ottawa. I can draw you a little picture of it.

Detective: Sure. Do you want to do that now while I'm...

Russell Williams: Sure.

Detective: ...out getting the map, okay?

Russell Williams: Okay. [clears throat]

Detective: Want anything to eat or anything? I'll leave that right there, okay?

Russell Williams: Thank you. But I do want to talk to you again.

Detective: That's the plan, okay? I'll be right back.

Russell Williams: Okay.

Detective: How you making out there? How you making out?

Russell Williams: Alright.

Detective: I got somebody running around looking for an actual map but uh, I did the same thing with uh, the Google maps except blew them up a little bit more, um, this is the, this is the biggest of the area. I'm hoping this might have better parameters for you. There's Tweed.

Russell Williams: Point 7, a kilometer from this intersection on this side of the road.

Detective: And what road is that? Cary?

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: South of, can't read that word, uh, East Hungerford.

Russell Williams: Mm-hm.

Detective: Does that make sense? Oh, there it is, there. Okay.

Russell Williams: Yeah.

Detective: How far off the road is she?

Russell Williams: 40 feet.

Detective: Is she bur., is she covered with anything?

Russell Williams: No, she's wrapped up.

Detective: In what?

Russell Williams: And she's on the surface. Just a grey something or other cover.

Detective: Okay, very obvious question I'm going to have for you is when they go there, and they'll be there shortly...

Russell Williams: Mm-hm...

Detective: They're going to find her?

Russell Williams: Oh yeah.

Detective: Okay, I'll be right back. You look like you want to say something.

Russell Williams: Just that the, this place, my wife, it's been a dream for her, for a better part of the year so I'm keen to get them what they need and so they can leave her alone.

Detective: Okay, we, uh, we'll going to do our best to keep it as low key as possible, okay?

Detective: Okay, well, what do you want to talk about?

Russell Williams: I guess it's, uh, pretty wide open now, eh?

Detective: Yeah.

Russell Williams: What do you want to know?

Detective: Well, do you want to work forwards or backwards?

Russell Williams: It doesn't matter.

Detective: Why don't we start with Jessica?

Russell Williams: Okay.

Appendix D: Michael Rafferty Police Interrogation

First part.

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6Sf-ww0va_U

Detective: Well I didn't grab a chair that's a petal unfold so that's a blanket for either okay tea I think they might have only put one sugar okay you hungry now I get you a full meal if you want that's okay you can lessen and if you've any questions as we go along but no issues there at all okay I got a few things I'll talk to you about okay.

Detective: I'll probably call you Mike so what's that really offend you just leave it with me now you should I mean probably my name because your middle name what your middle names is Christopher so remembering my name how come you get more than one middle name you know I got three middle name well that's because my parents thought okay I'm an only child so they named you after everybody so I got named after a grandfather two uncles so I know what your I know what you're going through there because my initials I get teased about but I have over a few things here today

Detective: okay Mike I guess they don't be shy you'll find them pretty relaxed real laid-back because I've dealt with this these types of issues before okay I know that earlier tonight that you've had an opportunity to have your rights read to you what you understood that you understand your caution you don't have to say anything okay to me or any other police officers and we had an opportunity to speak with the lawyer so there's no issues for bringing it up now having said that though anytime that you have a question all right don't be shy no I have no issues getting any food there so if there's something that you want there's no problem that for me about five minutes so but my job is as I mentioned to hear them from what's called the behavioral sciences section and we're talking about the missing person one that Tori staff remember saying I know you're falling a little bit in the media you follow some little bits and pieces that there was behavioral sciences people involved right then sometimes they were criminal profilers and other members in that well threat assessment that's what said one of my roles is as well in threat assessment well my job is to determine the risk okay what's the risk of a certain situation the situation that we're talking about it you're gonna find here that there's nothing you're gonna tell me to surprise me okay for two reasons

Detective: one I've heard a lot of this stuff before the second reason is I'm fortunate enough to know what all the case bags are okay so what I have to do is assess is assess what I perceive is a threat so are you going to go and kill more people after this this situation okay doesn't my job is to assess assess threat level alright there you know you're responsible for one okay so that's what my job is is to determine okay what's happened here all right we're in a situation there now where the investigators have been to the to the Home Depot wealth okay and they've been to the scene the other siding wall where Tori is so I'm aware of that stuff I'm aware of what happened leading up to her disappearance and obviously you were following in the media as well to see obviously the composite of the girl that was involved with you in this and also the yellow pictures of the vehicles I know I got a look at it from your standpoint as well that's human nature right I mean you see that the police aren't advertising they're looking for a male subject and they're not advertising I will come for this gray Honda right there sure they show this band and the reality of it is your vehicle is on the video before that that is anyway so your vehicle is connected to this through video right from the beginning okay I know it's a pretty good feeling to be involved in something like this and

the police don't come near yet for over a month right please don't talk to you till May 15th is the first time that they come around so you're feeling pretty comfortable okay so those are the things that I have to that I have to look at but before we go through all that though my people just don't wake up one day and decide this is gonna happen and I know that all right

Detective: So there's a lot of ideas that go on people's heads at the time if I go through and I have I go through your history in your background there's not a whole hell of a lot you've been involved in it life is ER right you're completely under the radar okay you're flowing completely under the radar your whole life I think you're involved in some vehicle thefts and stuff bringing some vehicles years ago right when you're a kid we've all done that I can't look you in the face say I'm bad well you already told an officer that you did that right

Michael Rafferty: I didn't say that's what I did what did you say I said we went into cars and were unlocked and took things out of them and that was it.

Detective: Okay I used the term breakdown okay now the reason I say that is back when I was a detective when you go into a car or a house where there's locked or unlocked out to break in okay because you're not supposed to be in there so that's where that terminology came from okay Mike but anyways I got to go through a few things with you here all right obviously you're you're upset by what's going on you're here for a reason and right back at the beginning the investigators in the case manager the officers charge said that I'm going to follow the evidence and go where the evidence leads me okay and now you're here because the evidences has led the investigators to you all right and I get involved after after that there's my people that I work with and behavioral sciences that have been here from the outset of the investigation but really at this at this point in time I mean I lied to win and look at your history there's very little on there like I said you've flown on the radar you haven't had any major problems with the with the police okay but all of a sudden you're involved in this situation and it's a serious situation and that's a serious situation.

Detective: I'm sure you're you're quite upset and quite concerned about what - what's going on here all right the last one I was involved with like this I don't know if you're aware of it was a girl named Holly Johnson tronc she went missing and the guy that had abducted her his name was Michael brewer and what he was doing as he was watching on his computer for hours and hours and hours he was looking at child porn to the point that he decides I wanna go try this and he goes and he grabs Holly and he does things to her and then he realizes what am I gonna do okay any panics he doesn't know what to do because she's a witness now and he says if I just let her go she's gonna tell on me so he decides that he's not gonna let her go all right I know a lot was from something as simple as watching child pornography for hours on end these things happen okay and we can't see it happening close to home traumas not that far from you okay these things happen all the time all right so what I need to do is sit with you all right you know how I know the who's right why I mean why is up to you but I can actually probably fill in that blank for you but that's not what my rule here is if I'm going to assess risk here and see number one you even feel bad about what you've done that's the first thing I look for and number two do I think okay he doesn't feel bad so an attorney's probably going to do this again because he really doesn't care about it the first time.

Detective: It's happened okay but I also know that you've probably made some other choices in life and to who you associate with right we've all done that we've all brought home a girlfriend or a boyfriend or something that people aren't going to approve of and we've all had

friends that our family's not going to approve of I've done that we all have so that's what we have to sit and sit and walk out here but it's one of those things that you leave see I'm not not at all upset with you I'm not mad at you I don't mind sitting here talking you'll know if I don't want to talk to you because I'll just simply leave right and I have no issues with that but at the same time you and I need to have open communication like I appreciate you clarifying with me when I comment about a break-in okay because I have to make sure you understand the terminology I use I have to understand that you're using as well know as I go through this let you see it'll be a few things that that I'm a that it may cover up that you may say I don't understand that but having said that from from reading about you this to me seems like it's out of character no I could be wrong right you may have you may have been playing this for a long period of time and you may have thoroughly enjoyed this and if I'm wrong then you tell me that all right but I also know that we all make mistakes okay that's what pencils have erasers okay because we all make mistakes it's that simple spending time with you here and if I'm wrong and you tell me but it looks like if you could turn back time there is a few decisions in life you've made a little bit different all right if I could turn back time for you Mike I would but it's not that simple okay so now you and I have to sit here and face what's happened okay.

Detective: like I said tell you what happened I can take you through the day of her disappearance okay I mean I've seen the I've seen the video alright I know that you didn't do this along and but at the end of the day we got it we're going to deal with this situation okay because it's a young girl we got to talk about and if you and I don't sit and talk about your site then people who only think the worst right it's human nature right you've done it nighttime we always think the worst until we know the facts okay so that's what you and I need to sit here and work and discuss and work through again if I'm wrong you tell me okay but I really believe if you could turn back time you would deal this I'll deal with this a little bit different okay and there may have been a rush of they have been exciting for a period of time but then reality sets in you know sitting over the fact of what's happening okay that's what we're doing here just deal with what's happened now it can take you to any point in that day when Tory was missing the time she was missing to the time things get out of hand

Detective: Alright and I can outline that to you and I can deny some of the what's called post defense behavior so after the offense on the behavior that happened they're getting rid of some of the evidence and things like that okay your vehicle has been seized and there's been some steps you've taken the kind of mask for get rid of some of that evidence you may be successful in some ways but you won't be successful getting rid of all the evidence and all the DNA because there's not a cleanser out there that'll do that nice that was dozens of people that have tried okay there's no magical stain remover out there to get rid of DNA so really at this point what you have left is your word and your credibility and people always think the worst okay until they know the truth you do it Naidu it's human nature so we're all gonna think the worst until we know why this is happening in your mind and again if it's something where you're like why cubrir where you look there's a lot of child form and then just knighted you're gonna try it and that's fine if it wasn't your idea then that's fine too but we can't change the case facts are all right everything that I've said other than that great can think about got wrong at this point in time they can condemn right that's fine you don't have to see if it's wrong right okay but you know deep down that it is and you know deep down that this is your chance to get it off your chest you're not sitting there the rest of your life saying I guess

I should have said something all right I guess I should have got it off my chest I said my site because this is your last chance to do it the fact that you're here and the fact that they've already they know where the victim is okay and they know your steps this is it you watch Altima fighting at all you don't watch it.

Michael Rafferty: Yeah.

Detective: you have to take the steps now to live the rest of your life okay this is what you have to do I need to talk about this I've got to determine as part of my job when all is said and done here do I think Mike's done this is it he's made his mistake he realizes how wrong he a mistake that he made he's willing to look past it or do I have to sit here and say all right my report is going to say very simple I think this guys are gonna reoffending I think this guy isn't

..

Michael Rafferty: The court will decide if I've done it or not?

Detective: of course the courts will decide if what your rule isn't this good this particular case my rule is to write a report for the court to determine what I think your risk level is and that's there's other reports so that my units write as well and that's what our job is we deal with these types of situations and the reasons why people do this stuff okay like you say this may have been a thing that you just snap and did something that stuff happens or maybe something you plan for many months I got some enjoyment out of the part.

Michael Rafferty: I didn't do anything.

Detective: well that's not entirely true.

Michael Rafferty: It's entirely true like I didn't do anything.

Detective: you can try and cement yourself into that okay but at the same time you're not doing yourself any good by not being truthful okay because by not being truthful all you have left is your credibility right that's all you have left okay you're not the only person who's been arrested and charged okay there's no surprises left anymore okay the only it's not even a surprise it's why this happening

Michael Rafferty: Also not the only innocent person who's ever been arrested and charged.

Detective: well that's true there's been people that have been arrested for things where there's no evidence but of course in this case there's lots of things to determine your role in this crime okay even the steps that you've taken to try and eliminate your involvement okay clearly I guess maybe I should explain the evidence a little bit more maybe that maybe that's my mistake but because I'm so comfortable in fact dealt with all of these a little bit more but the reality of it is as I mentioned earlier your vehicle seen on the video okay the girl who's on the video who walks away with Tori has been identified and she's been identified as her and Tori being in your car and the three of you and her and Tori go to the gwelf area go to the Home Depot okay and the grabbing of Tori there was a was a planned event that you were going to grab her you're gonna grab a girl does that a person was going to do it the other person got the girl put her in your car all right and then there's other steps that are taken from there okay there's things that happened at Home Depot there's things that happen on a sciatic well there's things that happened to Tori all right before she's gone and you're involved in it and you can't you can't master that you can't change.

Michael Rafferty: no, no, no, no, ..

Detective: because what's happened is half that I can't turn back the hands of time but neither can you okay there's nothing I can do then turn back the hands of time and see I wish Mike would have reacted to this situation a little bit differently okay there's no tips come in

on you sooner than the recently there's no there's been a few tips there's been a few people that mention your name in the past when all these tips are put together then the ball starts rolling and then the fact that when they dissect these tapes and they also go in both directions of the table rather they go before they see Tori and they go after they see Tori and behold there's your car all right and that starts it as well so there's and then after you can I think you know if you're aware about how much media attention was given but then they start collecting the videos from the highway right to see which vehicles went where so the video is going to play a very key role a videotape to evidence will be a very key role in this investigation and determining what happened because there's cameras everywhere right the average Canadian is on camera eight times a day whether we go to a gas station later go Tim Hortons

Detective: We drive through a light that has a camera certain communities of cameras certain weather stations have cameras or news stations so we will go through as Canadians a minimum of eight cameras so you go through cameras as have I believe all we've all done that there's no questioning that that we've all seen these cameras or been on these cameras but there's no doubt in my mind okay there's no doubt in my mind that you're involved in the abduction okay love Tori no doubt in my mind at all I followed the evidence I've read the file okay there's no doubt in my mind we're past that okay and the only concern or the issue that I have is why you did this what caused you to do this was it something you would like to say is it something you've done before and you've been involved in the death of other people and you can divide this am i sitting across the desk from call Bernardo over here I might sitting across from someone who's made a mistake okay and that's gonna be the question that's asked at the end all right I'll get you a bucket there

Detective: just a second I gotta get sick booth sir okay I've seen it before you're not gonna offend here but you got to be sick leg or in head no get you some paper towels really if you're gonna music just just grab the of the bucket they're handy for you okay you and I need to have a discussion this isn't this isn't a parking ticket okay this is this is reality okay and people who have already told you you know this people assume the worst until they know the truth okay and people are going us from the worst of you unless you and I sit here and clarify it.

Detective: okay something's pushed you to do this feeling that you can't just fly to the radar your entire life okay like it doesn't happen it's not realistic I'm not gonna sit and tell you that something brings this on when you sit and talk to someone who had a troubled life like my career and just gets pushed in and doing this and panics and thinks what would it be like to take a kid and touch and rub a kid and then wish you could stop okay and people can and that's the whole issue here all right we can't control every emotion all right we can't control some of our urges some of our thoughts none of us can okay and I can't look in the face and see I haven't made a mistake or made a bad decision in life because I have but the reality of it is you and I have to accept that and move on okay because I can walk out here and never see you again like I can do that my job here is done the job here is done as you'll find out tomorrow as things start to be released there is no more questions there is no more long drawn-out investigations there already sending people home to spend time with their families okay they're scaling back what's happened because it's been cleared and they know what's happened the pieces of evidence have been gathered so that's reality I can't downplay that well you and I need to walk out of here together okay with what happened here you and I

have to sit and see this is what push Mike over at the top this is what push like to get involved in something like this. Because if we don't then you sit here on your own you have to take it well pen is not necessarily fair all right.

Michael Rafferty: I sit here on my own anyways and take this.

Detective: I'm taking this to an extent you do yes you have to sit there and decide am I going to get rid of this and get this off my chest so people understand my sight or am I gonna sit there curled up and keep it in for the rest of my life all right you need to be realistic about this okay you have no battle plan to deal with this great it's happened to spot a control anything okay if I ever caught for it what am I gonna do well your planet isn't gonna work okay cuz you're not built for this isn't what you're a boat okay you're not some sick bastard right that the system gets enjoyment out of hurting people all right so now you have to live with this okay and to live with it one of the first ways right it's like if someone's an alcoholic what's the first thing they have to do but knowledge they've got the issue all right you have an issue here in that there's overwhelming evidence compelling evidence that indicates you're involved in what's happened to Tori okay and I can't change that you can't change that at this stage but you need to be honest and you need to understand your credibility Mike is all you have left all you have left from here on in is your credibility and you're sitting here saying nothing doesn't do you a bit of good because no - no and then all of a sudden ten years from now or five years now you decide to say something who's gonna lesson nobody okay this is your chance to say your piece all right the evidence is very clear I'm only giving you bits and pieces if I sit here for me to see and tell you all of it we'll be here all night okay and that's really not my purpose all right.

Detective: so you need to understand what's going on okay there's evidence to show what happened here alright and what caused you to do what you did that's what's important what would cause you to get involved in an incident like this okay and like I say you probably were feeling pretty good about yourself for a while because really like you say it wasn't till May 15th that the police has been around the scene and they never say anything about your vehicle being on the video they've released the other vehicle instead all right but you know your vehicle's on there it's plain as day and like you say if you want and you can see probably I'm trying not to it of respect actually for you but I can sit and get as graphic as I want okay because none of this stuff bothers me because I've seen it hundreds of times okay but if I sit go over what what's happened here with Tori you may not be real happy about it because it's gonna cause you to relive all this crap.

Detective: okay and maybe you want it because I can tell you I've sat with guys that wanted me to say it again so they could hear what they've accomplished I've had them where they want me to see it two and three times because they get a rush out of that I don't think that's you okay you're not some sick guy okay I'm not sitting across from Paul Bernardo okay I know that and I know people that have set across from him okay to officers that have in different stages of their lives okay and I know what he's all about you're not that guy all right but at the same time you can't just sit here and say well this all goes away right this isn't like a list your girlfriend gives you to say here's a list of things to do can you go pick up a few things at the grocery store for me get some gas this isn't what that is okay this is a lot more serious than that to-do list there's no doubt in my mind that you've done this de Torre know don't mind we're past that okay.

Detective: there's no doubt to me I believe I truly believe it's out of character you can correct me if I'm wrong I believe it's out of character but Mike I can't sit and talk to you and pretend that nothing's happened okay I can't turn back time okay you've been involved in this thing along the way there's been some decisions made that I would like to think you would take back okay but again I believe this is on a character from for you I could be wrong like I don't think you feel you feel very good about this I think you feel very good about what happened to this girl I'm sure that every day you've had to deal with this stress alright now we need to understand what pushed you to this point what caused you to do this what would what would cause you flying under the radar we're acting you're actually a quite popular person when the investigators talk to people you're a very well-liked individual there's not a bunch of people say a lot of bad about you all right there are some people that report that you might be involved in this there's not a lot of people that sitting there saying bad about you all right so that's only that you have some people that respect you and some people don't like you but that also tells me that again this must be a character for you okay as soon as I sat and talked about people that have been involved in killing more than one person you get disgusted okay you mean will be disgusted with me or you may be disgusted with the thought of the whole thing okay but that's not what you want to hear you're disgusted by that what does that tell me tells me that you're not the type of person that wants to go and kill okay but we need to deal with reality and our value of it is your credibility is all you have left at this point if you sit there and say nothing everybody's going to assume the worst okay and you may be painted with a picture that you're not real happy with okay I'm the only one that feels like sitting in here with you right there's no investigators lined up in here sitting with you while you think that is right because they've been working on this group for weeks okay they're tired and they've been away from their families and none of them want to come in here and talk to you okay.

Detective: I have no issue that I'm neutral I don't have these issues I haven't been away from my family I don't like talking deeply I've talked to people that have been involved in things far worse than what they're saying you did here far worse okay I can sit and list of things that I've been involved in there people have done things that have been a threat to our national security terrorism in Canada or dealt with people that have been involved in murders one three people all right I've been involved with people who have abducted and taken life of children I've been involved I built with many people who are sex offenders at habitué and repeatedly touching molest children I've dealt with that it does that stuff doesn't bother me okay what's going on here is is that you're just in there you're just a big bundle of nerves and you don't know what to do you don't know whether to sit here shake ship you don't know what to do but the reality of it is at the end of the day the evidence is the evidence okay and the evidence clearly shows you're responsible for the abduction of Tory okay and I also know that she's no longer with us okay and you're responsible for that too okay there's a sexual component to this as well so you might want to sit and get this off your chest and go through your side with me all right because if I just walked away at minimum that's what people are gonna think at minimum all right.

Detective: we sit and look at michael Briere when he was in Toronto okay well what happened was college owns an 11 year old girl she's abducted in Tron okay and it was a big search for her and her mother was on the news repeatedly pleading for her safety and what my Cabrera had done as I'd mentioned because he was watching pornography on the Internet does internet home he kept looking at it looking at he had this desire as he saw it to get more

and more so then he decides after watching this for a period of time that he wants to touch a kid so he goes out and he finds a kid and brings her into his apartment she goes willingly he talks her into it and she goes and he he does some sexual things to her but then he panics because he's thinking holy crap she can identify me she knows where I live what do I do okay he causes for death and later on it takes a bit of time but investors agree and investigators track him down and he is arrested because of the evidence and the first thing he does when he gets on the camera she looks at the camera and says I apologize here's what I did bomani about what happened with the pornography and then he actually outlines since he gives actually some parents some safety tips for their kids says if you don't want your kid to be abducted here's what you need to do any child tells them to what for what kids should be doing okay and what happened to him you haven't heard about why is that because he apologized and moved on that's why you've never heard of him okay but you've heard of Paul Bernardo who didn't apologize right everyone knows who Paul Bernardo is great that happened in southwestern Ontario everyone knows that he isn't one of those who Carla is great and is this appalling Carla thing that's gonna be honest okay make no mistake I'm not making this up okay I was involved with the green ribbon task force which was the fallen Carlos in the 90s okay I had all kinds of involvement from the time it was unsalted the time of was soft but no one's ever heard of my career for the reason I just told you all right but they sure as hell know who these other guys are right and it's the same as it's the same situation you've been and if someone a friend of yours lies to you or someone rips you off for for 50 bucks or 20 bucks right and you catch them you say listen why did you take my money the guy says I didn't take your money right you're pretty pissed off with that getting do you know what Mike I took your money I apologize I was gonna I was gonna pay you back but you can't I panicked I took your money you can live with that all right but you have some explaining to do okay that's reality.

Detective: I can't change that okay if this is something that got out of control that you just planned on taking and you thought you were going to put her back or bridges take her for a ride that's fine and go to hand then we need to talk about that okay you need to sit and explain that and say why okay if not then I say people think the worst until they know all right that's human nature you and I have both done that we don't know the facts all right people can think the worst and that's what you have to deal with okay this is reality there's even steps that you know things that you've done to your vehicle to try and conceal the crime legacy you just can't there's no magical stuff that washes away being here gets rid of DNA okay keeping in mind a lot of the stuff that you did is on cameras and other spots okay I mean Home Depot is all kinds of cameras okay parking lots inside the store so you know if you don't win to the Home Depot store there's still cameras in that parking lot for security reasons and further that's another reason so this case primarily is solved through cameras all right but also there's other things I mean you didn't do this alone as I've told you I never told you who was who was with you though I know and I know I know what her role wasn't this okay I also know what was your was your vehicle but I can sit and write this out I can draw this thing out time toria's picked up at the time that horrendous come I can tell you that stuff all right what good is it coming from me investigators are going to do that okay.

Detective: my role is to sit and determine what the hell happened here what caused you to get involved in something like this and that's all my rule is if I walk away saying I don't don't know what caused it and that's the way it goes too bad right that's just the way it goes but if I

sit with you and determine what happened how this got off the rails then you're not sitting there long all right because you may be a lonely person for a period of time until people understand what the hell happened okay and the person that judges are the people that Judge you will all be people that make mistakes themselves but human nature is very simple we all appreciate when people are honest with us and when we all admit our mistakes and acknowledge when things get out of hand there's nothing wrong with that but then there's also times when we're out tolerant people that won't welcome our situations it's not like I'm not trying to belittle this or make it seem insignificant I know what I'm asking here I know about not asking to do something easy I know that okay and I know just because I owe the case box knife satin and the rooms for many hours of people under circumstances like yours are worse I'm not trying to downplay it or minimize it or be like some kind of smartass but at the same time you have to understand not only a sort of ring of truth of what I'm saying and a ring of experiences to what I'm saying because I've been there have been around it but there is no other way you don't have any other options there's nothing else that you can do to change what's happened to her we can't turn back time however we can explain how things got off the rails whether it was something that happened slowly or just went right off the rails rate from then from the beginning yeah it can be as simple as you drive it up to - I think somebody spots you with her in your car and you make a series of decisions all right.

Detective: I mean that's happened in the past where people have picked someone up and they weren't sure what they're gonna do somebody saw them and guess what happens great they panic I give you another example that because it was in the news recently I don't know if you know it was a case that was 38 years old okay happened in Northern Ontario up by North Bay and the guy was actually living in London he moved away 38 years after the the death of this 12 year old girl and through technology and DNA they were able to to solve it have you ever been heard of that case?

Michael Rafferty: No.

Detective: Why because the guy said yeah he was driving up the road took this kid and after driving up the road he sees a person he grabs her by the head and pulls her head down the dash of his truck and someone saw him do it but didn't know who the person was and years later he gets convicted and he acknowledges yeah you know what I screwed up and you've never even heard of this guy not happened in London last year that happened in October that it was a great big media event then it happened and it was done in court in in December and the whole thing was done there's media attention to that nobody even see it was even on your on your radar okay so these things do happen right whether you don't hear both them or not these things happen why do you think the OPP has the behavioral Sciences section this is all the stuff that we deal with okay we deal with occurrences that are unusual we deal with situations that aren't regular situations and that this is this isn't a regular situation this is a couple of people that made a series of decisions that hopefully they understand are quite right and that they feel bad about and are willing to you know apologize and you know accept the fact that hey I mean you know I made a mistake and I wish I could take it back but I just sitting there I'm thinking am I dealing with someone who's got all these all these issues and we do have someone who people are gonna think of some kind of monster am i dealing with someone who lets something get out of control okay and they got excited and couldn't control it I think that it got out of hand if you're asking my opinion I'm telling you I'm on video saying it I think this situation get out of hand that's my opinion and I believe that okay.

Detective: I don't think that you're some kind of monster if I did you'll find me pretty candid you'll find that I'll come right up and tell you like yeah I don't think that okay I think this got out of control I think it good out of hand okay are you some kind of monster or did you make a mistake here you made a mistake right this is a mistake right monk you take it back if you could this is a mistake right Mike you take it back you can turn back the hands of time like would you take this could you do this a little bit different like talking to you if you turn back the hands of time you're not some monster you've made a mistake right you take this back if you could this is a mistake Mike you need to deal with this monitor I know the right ?

Michael Rafferty: I did not do what you think I did.

Detective: I know you did we're past that you know or past that Mike I know you're not a monster if you identify if I thought your monster I would tell you I'm not gonna I'm gonna be honest with you I wouldn't just walk out I would spend some time with you for that true monster just because I want to see what makes you tick you're not a monster all right this thing is consumed you look at you right you can barely eat or drink you haven't touched you're doing it right why is that because your guts are eating yourself up inside okay you can't sit and say that you're innocent you know what's the first thing you do when you get in here you just laid down and curl up right it's all over you know it's over okay you know it's done okay you have to be an expert in body language all you've done is later on in the field position since you've been here that's not how innocent people act that's not how people that are falsely accused of something it's the positivity possibly that

Michael Rafferty: it's freezing I haven't eaten since noon it couldn't be that this is all just a huge huge shock to me no but has been any of that at all.

Detective: it's probably all of that but it's also a fact that here you're involved in it it's probably all about Mike okay the fact that maybe you have eaten that much and maybe you are cool there's no question the first thing you said to me was you're cold and hungry so that's why you're happy that stuff okay and all I'm willing to accept that maybe that is part of the issue okay but there is a bigger there is a larger issue there okay as the issue of the evidence the issue that you're involved in this we can't change that but there's no problem with acknowledging my legacy nothing's gonna change now you have I mean it's up to you there's a lot of things I'd be willing to sit and do with you if you're willing to do it maybe you want to sit and you and I discuss an apology but I would sit and do that whether it's a verbal one where you say your story or whether we write one out I'd be willing to do that if you want to go for a drive with me and you drive around explain things I would sit and do that I have no issue with that like I have no ill will anger towards I have none you don't uh you don't make me mad you don't upset me nothing like that okay the only issue I have is I don't fully understand and I acknowledge it I don't have to come in here is a behavioral scientist to tell you that don't understand something but I'm telling you that okay and I don't understand how you can fly on the radar for 28 years okay and get involved in this though it does happen all right it does it happens actually all the time where this stuff happens again I've actually given me a couple examples already of people that didn't have you know real dealings with the police and I get involved in this stuff where they abduct something that happens sometimes it's a simple one of the most common ways an abduction happens is through hitchhiking or someone's hitchhiking someone picks them up no noise off yet they just decide to keep them for a period of time that happens all the time happens in Ontario happens across Canada okay this one's a little bit different because you know the girls picked up the well Terry let's call us

baby Terry picks up Tori brings her to your car you guys drive away that's reality okay can't change that that's a different kind of abduction I mean I've acknowledged if it's unusual and it's an unusual kind of abduction it's not it's not normal.

Detective: I don't know how much you know about Terry but anyways she's involved in this we know that she's acknowledged this we know that she's already confessed and apologized to this been there done that so there's no real surprises here okay the only issue is how the hell did this has been control what's your cited me because I mean we already know hers what's your assignment and that's what I'm here to sit with you and talk you about because I wasn't a person to talk to - Terry gather the other officers did I volunteered here come here and shoot the show because I've talked to people in worse situations than you okay and let me say you've been pretty respectful with me you're not giving me a hard time you're not being rude to me so I'll sit with you because but you know the reality of it is I can walk away and you're gonna sit and deal with this on your own for the rest of your life okay I'm here to tell you that I'm pointing out some obvious things see all I've really done is point o common-sense and put some experiences I've had in behavioral sciences but we both know people think the worst until they know and we both know that people someone to fly on the radar for 28 years and be involved in something like this something that's caused it so all I've really done is point out to the obvious to you all right you're a smart guy you're not you're nobody's fool you know what you know the situation you know you're in a in a tough spot but there's a lot of things here that we just can't sit and ignore okay you just sing while you know it didn't really happen what we're just we're just too far past that it's unrealistic okay maybe after so ago when the investigation was doing you might be able to pull out but you can't know it's just all you're doing is hurting your own your own credibility.

Detective: And again this is your opportunity to save your piece but you've got some pretty serious explaining to do here okay in the big picture now with OB if I just leave you here you got some stuff that you need to explain I don't have to explain it you do I've already told you what my opinion is and my opinion is something caused you to do this okay because there's little things if I just sitting I just said a sentence or a word right I can make this thing seem along with this right I could just sit here say you know like that's it I'm gonna leave here you can spend the next little while figuring out how you're gonna explain the purchase of garbage bags okay we have this kid with you I can explain that okay I can explain it because I've been around this type of stuff how are you gonna do it on your own okay I have acknowledged already what my thoughts are of you kind of told you that from the beginning did this is etiquette okay maybe I'm wrong maybe that's why you don't want to talk could ever you think you know what Chris you're wrong you know maybe I have done this before maybe I minded on doing platinum doing that again alright I don't think that but I mean you could be sitting there playing you're right how would I know okay I can

tell you that I don't think that's the case because I've sat across from a lot of people again that have been through stuff a lot - a lot worse than you made a mistake man deal with it and we move on here's what happened I'm not saying for a second that you sat and watched a bunch of pornography and that's what force that pushed you to do this that's not what I'm saying at all I'm doing is I'm drawing a comparison to another case that I was involved in that was very similar okay but then you in fact help me by pointing out the gentlemen of these people are because nobody became insignificant in the end because the person who did it was honest

about it said what happened and I actually apologized and then offered tips to parents to safeguard their children.

Detective: I'm not asking you to do that unless you want it I'll ask you do anything you don't want to do but I am asking you to be truthful that's the only thing I'm asking of you okay because the truth is the only thing you have at this point your credibility like is all you have left okay. you sit here two three years from now and say okay I got a story I'd like people to listen who's gonna listen why would they listen okay you don't have the credibility once all the versions are out there and the evidence is all out there night geez I see what the evidence is now I can make my story match the evidence nobody cares Franky's you've no credibility at this stage here you have credibility because you can acknowledge your site and acknowledge what happened move on from there alright that's the first piece it's the same I told earlier someone has a drinking problem is to acknowledge it and move on okay here's what happened I'm sorry and I've moved on and if you're not comfortable apologizing maybe not everybody is comfortable saying they're sorry or admitting they made a mistake that's fine I'm not gonna ask you to do something you're not comfortable with however I am concerned that you're just gonna sit here no I'm gonna take a chance maybe I'll just leave it'll all work itself out well possibly this is not gonna work itself out okay we're past that you need to acknowledge what's caused you to do this okay that's because you're loaded up on oxygen seemed like a good idea at the time then maybe we better talk about that okay because it appears to me that half of Woodstock is on oxys based on what I've seen from this investigation so if you're part of the norm in this town and you made a series of bad decisions because of it then we better talk about it and people will be an awful lot more sympathetic to that and you just sitting there saying nothing okay because there's a very large percentage of people in this town that are on oxys okay and then the big picture that will become part of an inquiry as well as to why is it is so easy to get oxys in this town and why are there so many people because percentage was I travel all over Canada all right based in the head course and really I travel all over Canada for different cases I've never seen Hawks like this in my life okay and other seasoned investigators have come on this case have never seen Oxford this much there's a problem oxen in this okay very much yeah so we can't change them so if you've had too many auxes you can strum on too long and that's funny okay.

Detective: and I can tell you all kinds of stories of people that are addicted to okay sometimes it's people that are using it for recreation or a different type of high different type of drug but often it's hard-working people that get an injury or getting a car accident and they get addicted to them right that happens okay for the pain it's highly addictive right I think if you review the stats you'll find the people wolf we're on and will tell you it's more addictive than cigarettes it's more addictive than alcohol alright so if you've been struggling on oxys for a period of a couple months and then you made a bad decision and all of a sudden at the time it seemed good like it's like when you're drunk and you pick up a girl that was a great idea great to you for a girl later she was married or a stalker I've had that and you realized I was about to say that's all this is okay mike is a bit of abusive oxys then you and I should talk about that now all right because it's gonna be easier for you and I to explain that to this community than anything else all right because the percentages you know you know many people are allowed to use around here right the police know how many people are on oxys they had a rough idea before they can tell you who is oxygen right they can tell you who's supplying them right just through this investigation so the oxy issue will dry itself up but

there's also a very good chance there's going to be a separate public inquiry into the oxycontin use who's prescribing this I'll come there's so much on the street all right and how can somebody get go pick up a prescription for an injured mother or father or relative and just be given these oxy straight how many these oxys have to make it to the person that they're prescribed to so there's no lying issue here okay as a secondary issue with oxys in this town that's what this is and you had too many oxys and you made a series of bad decisions then why don't I talk with that because we can already show that the victim's parents are using oxys right they've admitted that themselves right so who are they to judge you alright when you're doing the same thing they are and maybe they're doing it more all right I'm prepared to sit and listen that you didn't brainstorm all this stuff and that just got out of control like I am right would it be here okay I am prepared to listen to that okay but you have to you have to also acknowledge that there's a problem okay and it's just like drinking if you're an alcoholic decide the worst part of that is you're out driving a car right and that's one of the worse things with alcoholics is the drunk driving but you have to acknowledge it and move on but you're no different than a large people the percentage of people in this town okay however you got hooked on them was at whether it was through recreation or it was fun or it was a source of income then that's fine okay.

Detective: because when you sit back and I'm quite a bit older than you and you go back when I was in high school if someone dealt a hard drug they got many years in jail they get years in jail minimum five years to be deal drugs when have you ever heard of anyone get five years in jail for anything great they don't so drug use there's more drug traffickers out there now than there's ever been no one gets arrested for drug trafficking two or three pick up that person's clientele and expand so if that's all this is a series of poor decisions through the use of oxycontin then why aren't you and I talking with them that's what you don't need to talk with this is our see cause I've sat here and discussed how people want to draw parallels to a pulp art or some kind of monster that's not right okay but only you and I can get to that okay oh you can get because if that's all this is the abusive oxycontin to the point that I've messed your head up and you grabbed this kid the only better talkable done because maybe there's a panic after you grab the kid while the kid was put in your car all right bye Terry so if you didn't grab it yourself that's fine we certainly drove with that kid in your car okay and that's the issue and you're on video doing it okay so you didn't grab her yourself that's fine okay I can live with that but what we have to do is explain what happened after the kid was in your car I'm willing to sit and do that with you okay because your credibility is all you're gonna have left and this might be the only logical explanation is drug use drug abuse you're not the creative oxycontin you're not the first person to use it you're not going to be the last ever it will dry up in this community in the near future as a result of this but and I've never said for a second that you went and took that kid from the school because you didn't that kid was taken from that school all right Mike Terry and put it in your car okay and you were there and you were part of when that kid was driven to Guelph and the whole people then from there the kid into the demise of the kid this is the stuff we need to explain it okay.

Detective: this is the stuff we need to acknowledge I need you to be like you were like my first come in and you clarify it because it was me that screwed up I want to sit break into a car because it's my terminology you need to but be the one that corrects me okay and you need to be the one that said like I've I said that you're involved in this abduction well you know what maybe I better be a little more clear with my Words Terry grabbed that kid from

the school okay we know that for a number of ways there's a whole host of issues well plus the fact well she mastered the comps and she's on the video it's later determined to be her and then she actually subsequently admits to it anyways but there's all kinds of events of that and your car was on that video at the time it's a unique car rateniczes nice-looking car it's good you need boiler on it to grab the attention of the video camera there's no little question I mean that your cares nation might can't might currently be on there but that's reality these are the things that you need to talk about to get your site open now because two years no one's gonna give a rat's ass who's gonna give a right two years ago because you know what Mike had his chance he didn't save nobody can control your desk you know but you okay I can I mean I already told you I've already put my cards on the table I'm already gonna walk out of that spent my time with the limp light and I don't think he's a monster I don't he's gonna kill two or three people in his life okay that's my threat assessor that's what my doing working Behavioral Sciences my job is supposed to be to determine the future what's Mike's threat when he leaves here I said as opportunity to say his piece okay and he's choosing not to say it but at the same time you've also been polite and enough the other plate and you've been able actually you've been yelled at point-o if I don't worry something I have no issue with that in fact I'm rather glad you did because it shows that you're paying attention and you understand I want you to take this seriously I don't want you to think that this is all this is all going to go away because it won't and you have to acknowledge that you have to know that you're smart enough to know this isn't just gonna go away right you can easily get some more and pretend it didn't happen

Detective: But what you need to be comfortable with is tell the truth about what you what your role is how this thing's spun out of control like it did and how a guy who's flown under the radar for 28 years ends up in this situation with all this overwhelming evidence implicating to this crime okay that's the issue again I don't think that I told you that I don't think you're some kind of monster but we've gotten off the rails here somehow you get off the rails and got yourself into this thing okay if it wasn't your idea that I wouldn't mind hearing that as well okay but it's got to be your words like not mine okay you don't meet me to draw you a map or draw a little story after what happened from the time that she's picked up to the time that she's gone but if that's all this is because of the oxys nothing I've talked a lot about is it the octaves is that what the problem is here is what's caused you 40-minute oxys what's that

Michael Rafferty: I am taking oxys.

Detective: yeah, I know you're taking on a show that's what's caused you to make these bad decision or just what caused us poor decision we made it or spawn and control that's what I'm asking the other if it's the oxys and that's what we deal with like I said there's a large percentage of people in this town they're in oxys when I want to get these coffees it was two standing in front of Tim Hortons would all maybe if they weren't on oxys they were on something all right there's a lot of zombies in this town there's a lot of people that are abusing this drug okay if that's what it is and you joined a large population of this talent you using oxys and you made a bad decision that' that's reality because these people that are taking the oxys make bad decisions every day they lie every day they manipulate every day right that's because that's how they get the drug to begin with sometimes they may have bills they haven't paid they may have drug debts that they they owe they may have to fly on the radar for a little while and keep a low profile cause they'll money.

Michael Rafferty: But the only reason if I'm sitting here is because I got involved with bad people.

Detective: yes I agree with that I'll be worse people you've ever imagined in your life all right yes you did yeah you did get I don't know if you know how many that were bad or just how bad were they I don't know what stage you knew they were bad what I'm gonna ask you a question I'd like you to answer it's not gonna implicate you anything did you have any idea how bad these people were.

Michael Rafferty: No.

Detective: yes do you think you do now are you have you was there a point when you caught on how bad or actually do have to answer them but you know I mean you do you got in with some top people all right I thought why do you think I've been sitting here you know I flying under the radar and stuff okay because this isn't you all right if you're one of these bad people would we not know that would we not have a great big sheet of issues with you this is right perhaps a violent crime a drug crime maybe home invasions to get drugs don't have any of those okay don't have any of this all right but this is what you need to explain these bad people and what their role is okay because this is your chance you've done all you can for these and now because of these people you're sick all right with the last chance this is the only time you're gonna have any credibility expired all these people sitting here lazarey were today this isn't done yet all right but there's already been people in here today and there's actually people in the other interview rooms as we speak they've been cycle through all night okay and I will tell you this and actually I'll put it on a piece of paper and I'll sign it every person we've had in here today is confessed every single one of them today because one piece of evidence leads to another to another until bang it happens okay it starts out with a video starts up with some other information coming in and it starts out with okay allowing the evidence to one person every person in here today has saved their ass okay every single one and guess who they guess who the only person is that the threat assessor and the Behavioral Sciences guys interviewing just you

Michael Rafferty: Everybody saved their ass.

Detective: Everybody said their piece man any other chance...

Michael Rafferty: how do these people it's not saving their ass.

Detective: now you're probably right they said their piece that's probably a better way to put it everyone said their side of the story while they had the chance now or someone else could say it for them that's maybe a better way to put it but every one of them has today and that's reality another kind of an interesting tidbit though - they were pretty young I wouldn't say surprised but they didn't know where you were for earlier in the day and they found you later on but they weren't sure where you were what you're doing who the police today but no the people have been in here already my good I know me know what's going anywhere the ones that are here arrested and staying but well some have gone to jail already but some are in holding at some of other court dates and stuff but I mean maybe you find this offensive and if you do just say you should have

Michael Rafferty: People like Tara and Rodney there are people who are locked up.

Detective: Rodney's not locked up they're gonna say old Terra's not locked up either no I'm sorry lady said Terry no Tara's not locked up I know Terry locked up Tara's not sorry Rodney's not if they're supposed to be then like see this is you've done all you can for these people okay and I have some concerns about both this actually going to finish off but I was

going to say you correct if I'm wrong you tell me but you think maybe you're in over your head a little bit on this they start to feel like maybe you're the last experienced person for a criminal standpoint done these other people can say.

Michael Rafferty: I can say I don't belong here.

Detective: I can say you belong here for a number reasons a guy like you shouldn't be in here okay but something's happened that you're involved in this thing that you're here and this is not going away all right none of these people have come forward today's a blank ok that has not happened in fact I think you can envision that the opposite is happened right so now we better clarify some of this stuff ok because that was an opportunity for us to clarify what many people have thoughts we going on from day one okay but again you've done all you can for these people all right and now you're sitting here alright and this is your chance because I'm not coming back to you tomorrow or a week from now there's no point okay because there really is you're giving your chance enough not willing to take it there's your opportunity then it's up to you okay everything stays the same video the charges you're currently facing the situations that you have the court dates all that stays the same way you and I talk it on right if I walk out of here that's the end of it for you but I'm willing to listen because there is more of this story okay and I know there is and I can actually I can tell you where the issues are that bug yeah I mean if you want me to do that but at the same time you have to acknowledge that there is evidence out there compelling evidence that links you to this situation and that's what we need to get to the bottom of it is how the hell did you get mixed up in this alright.

Detective: I want to listen tonight I'm willing to have you actually appreciate it when you correct me or clarify stuff with me because it shows we're having a conversation okay and you're paying attention - all right and I appreciate that you're paying attention - and I'm paying attention to you okay but we have to have a two-way communication between the two of us what should we be talking about what do you think what can we talk about in relation to this that takes some of the heat off of youth.

Michael Rafferty: What are you asking?

Detective: Okay what I'm asking is this you there's cement for you don't feel you should be here I think we've acknowledged that and I don't know if I was being rude but I think you're in over your head and I think you've been working or hanging around people that are far more experienced as criminals you could hang around the criminal those Goods call it this list view drugs called space babe you've been hanging around criminal and there's really no indication that you are a major criminal but you've been hanging around with something right and whether you've been manipulated that's up to you to clarify what if that's what's happened then you and I should talk about that if you think that there's a discussion we should have a book to tear then we should have it okay now's the time for you and I to have that conversation as opposed to way down the road there's a conversation I wish we have about Rodney now is the time or Terry I'm sitting here willing to listen all right I'm not going myself and I get a water ball I can just sit talk with you okay Mike but you've got a you've got a you've got to kind of meet me halfway here all right I'm willing to do that with you okay I'm going to sit with you tight I'm not in any rush but at the same time it's got to be or it doesn't make you look fat either it's got to be where your credibility goes like serious telling the truth okay so what I'm saying is if you're gonna sit with me I don't want to go too far away I want you to be.

المستخلص

تتناول هذه الدراسة دور التحركات والمؤشرات الحجاجية في أربع تحقيقات تابعة للشرطة الأمريكية والكندية. حيث تم فحص المؤشرات الحجاجية في المناقشات والخطب السياسية، وخطاب قاعة المحكمة وغيرها من أنواع الخطاب، وعلى الرغم من ذلك، لم يتم إجراء التحقيق في المؤشرات الحجاجية في استجواب الشرطة الأمريكية والكندية، لا سيما من المنظور التداولي الحجاجي وبالتالي فإن الدراسة الحالية تحاول غلق هذه الفجوة من خلال تسليط الضوء على المؤشرات الحجاجية واستخداماتها في البيانات الخاضعة للدراسة. تهدف الدراسة إلى تحديد التحركات والمؤشرات الجدلية ووظائفها، والاختلافات بين مختلف المؤشرات الحجاجية التي تستخدمها الشرطة الأمريكية والكندية، كما سنعالجها كذلك عند المشتبه بهم.

الفرضيات الرئيسية للدراسة هي:

1. كل مرحلة لها مجموعة محددة من المؤشرات التي يتم استخدامها بدلاً من غيرها. على سبيل المثال: طلب التوضيح والنزاع يظهران في مرحلة المواجهة.

2. ليس هناك فرق ذو دلالة إحصائية بين الشرطة الأمريكية والكندية والمشتبه بهم في استخدام المؤشرات الحجاجية في المواجهة والافتتاحية والجدال والمرحلة الختامية.

لتحقيق الأهداف والتحقق من هذه الفرضيات، تعتمد الدراسة أنموذج المناقشة النقدية من قبل فان اميران (Van Eemere) وهوتلوسر (Houtlosser) وهنكمنز (Henkemans). كما وتستخدم الدراسة المناهج النوعية والكمية في تحليل البيانات.

الاستنتاجات الرئيسية للدراسة هي:

1. لا تستخدم جميع المؤشرات الحجاجية الموضحة في الأنموذج في استجواب الشرطة. يتطلب هذا النوع من الخطاب مجموعة محددة من المؤشرات وعلى النحو التالي:
 - طلب التبرير، طلب التوضيح، التأكيد القوي، التأكيد الضعيف، شبه التأكيد، والشك في مرحلة المواجهة.
 - تتميز الفترة الافتتاحية بالتحدي للدفاع عن وجهة نظر، وقبول التحدي والاتفاق والخلاف مع اقتراح المجادل الآخر.
 - الحجج التنسيقية والتبعية هي علامات مرحلة الجدال.
 - أخيراً، يعد التراجع عن وجهة نظر والاحتفاظ بالرأي من علامات المرحلة الختامية.

2. يختلف استخدام المؤشرات الحجاجية للمواجهة والافتتاحية وجزء من مرحلة الجدال من قبل الشرطة الأمريكية والكندية، ولكنهم متشابهون في استخدام المؤشرات الجدلية للمرحلة الختامية. يختلف المشتبه بهم الأمريكيون والكنديون في استخدام جزء من مؤشرات المواجهة، وهم متشابهون في تطبيق المؤشرات الحجاجية للمراحل الافتتاحية والجدال والختامية.

تنتهي الدراسة ببعض التوصيات والاقتراحات للدراسات اللاحقة.



جمهورية العراق
وزارة التعليم العالي والبحث العلمي
جامعة كربلاء
كلية التربية للعلوم الانسانية
قسم اللغة الانجليزية

المؤشرات الحجاجية في استجابات متعارضة للمشتبه بهم لدى الشرطة الأمريكية والكندية - من منظور تداولي جدلي

رسالة مقدمة

الى

مجلس كلية التربية للعلوم الانسانية - جامعة كربلاء لنيل شهادة الماجستير في اللغة
الانكليزية وعلم اللغة

الطالبة

يسر صباح عيدان

بإشراف:

أ.د مؤيد عمران جواد

2022 ميلادية

1444 هجرية